In Vitro Study of the Effects of Topical Treatments with Silver Compounds on the Inhibition of Demineralisation of Hydroxyapatite Discs and Human Enamel

2019
WEI-TE HUANG
MSc Oral Biology (QMUL), DDS (Chung Shan Medical University)

Thesis submitted in fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in the University of London

Dental Physical Sciences Unit
Institute of Dentistry
Barts and The London School of Medicine and Dentistry
Queen Mary University of London
Statement of Originality

I, WEI-TE HUANG, confirm that the research included within this thesis is my own work or that where it has been carried out in collaboration with, or supported by others, that this is duly acknowledged below, and my contribution indicated. Previously published material is also acknowledged below.

I attest that I have exercised reasonable care to ensure that the work is original and does not to the best of my knowledge break any UK law, infringe any third party’s copyright or other Intellectual Property Right, or contain any confidential material.

I accept that the College has the right to use plagiarism detection software to check the electronic version of the thesis.

I confirm that this thesis has not been previously submitted for the award of a degree by this or any other university.

The copyright of this thesis rests with the author and no quotation from it or information derived from it may be published without the prior written consent of the author.

Signature: WEI-TE HUANG
Date: 30/1/2019
Acknowledgements

This research would not have been possible without the sponsorship from my parents and the caring from the family of my older brother.

I am thankful to my academic supervisors, Prof. Paul Anderson and Dr Saroash Shahid, for their dedicated and supportive supervision and their patience and invaluable insights to guide me through all the obstacles encountered. Also, I would like to thank Miss Charlotte Royle, who provided mental support and constructive advice when required.

A special thanks to Dr Natalia Karpukhina for her constant teaching about the MAS-NMR and any priceless technical support provided. I would like to thank Dr David Gillam for advising me to validate my experimental methodology, which is crucial for my ISE study.

My PhD journey would not have been so enjoyable without all my fellow students in the Dental Physical Sciences Unit. For all the fun and memorable time we had in the PhD office and at conferences, I thank especially Tomas Duminis, Farah Nabeel Mohammed Tahir Al-Khayyat, Huda Al-mandil, Alexander Jon Cresswell-Boyes, Agron Hoxha, Bajram Ferizoli, Abdullah Holdar, Saja Mannaa, Manpreet Padwal and Sherif Elsharkawy.

I am deeply grateful to my wife, Chieh En Lai, for her continued love, encouragement and belief in me. I can never thank her enough for the distress and the depression calmed by her these days. She is the fundamental basis of strength helping me to carry on my PhD.
Abstract

Despite years of use, the enamel demineralisation inhibitory mechanisms of topical treatments with silver compounds remain obscure. This study aimed to investigate the effects of topical treatments with silver compounds, including AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (silver diammine fluoride; SDF), on demineralisation of hydroxyapatite (HAP) discs and human enamel. Further, the dose-response effects of these silver compounds on demineralisation of human enamel were also investigated.

The dose-response effect of Ag⁺ in solution on demineralisation was investigated using scanning microradiography (SMR). The effects of topical treatments with AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F on demineralisation of HAP discs and human enamel were investigated using real-time Ca²⁺, Ag⁺ and F⁻ ion selective electrodes (ISEs), scanning electron microscopy (SEM), energy dispersive X-ray analysis (EDX), and ³¹P and ¹⁹F magic angle spinning-nuclear magnetic resonance (MAS-NMR).

The results from this study suggest that the inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgNO₃ is associated with the formation of a Ag₃PO₄ protective barrier. Whereas, the inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F is associated with the F⁻ released from topically treated sample surfaces and the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag₃PO₄, CaF₂ and FHA. Further, the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with AgNO₃ decreased with increasing concentration, whereas, the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F increased with increasing concentration.
PART I: LITERATURE REVIEW, AIMS AND OBJECTIVES .............................................................. 1

Chapter 1 INTRODUCTION OF DENTAL MINERAL ...................................................................... 2
1.1 Human Tooth Structure ........................................................................................................ 2
1.2 Human Enamel ..................................................................................................................... 3
   1.2.1 Composition of Human Enamel .................................................................................. 3
   1.2.2 Mineral Structure of Human Enamel ......................................................................... 4
1.3 Hydroxyapatite Discs as a Model System for Human enamel ........................................... 6

Chapter 2 DENTAL CARIES AND EROSION .............................................................................. 7
2.1 Enamel Demineralisation ..................................................................................................... 7
2.2 Dental Caries ....................................................................................................................... 7
   2.2.1 Aetiology of Dental Caries ......................................................................................... 8
   2.2.2 Chemistry of Dental Caries ...................................................................................... 10
      2.2.2.1 Translucent zone ............................................................................................... 12
      2.2.2.2 Dark zone ........................................................................................................ 12
      2.2.2.3 Body of lesion .................................................................................................... 12
      2.2.2.4 Surface zone ...................................................................................................... 13
   2.2.3 Epidemiology of Dental Caries ................................................................................... 13
2.3 Dental Erosion ..................................................................................................................... 14
   2.3.1 Aetiology of Dental Erosion ..................................................................................... 14
   2.3.2 Chemistry of Dental Erosion ................................................................................... 15
   2.3.3 Epidemiology of Dental Erosion .............................................................................. 18
   2.4 Role of Fluoride in Enamel Demineralisation ................................................................. 19

Chapter 3 TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH SILVER COMPOUNDS FOR PROTECTION AGAINST
ENAMEL DEMINERALISATION .................................................................................................. 22
3.1 Use of Silver Compounds in Dentistry ............................................................................... 22
3.2 Topical Treatments with Silver Nitrate for Protection against Enamel Demineralisation 23
CONCENTRATIONS OF SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION OF HUMAN ENAMEL

Chapter 10 DOSE-RESPONSE EFFECTS OF TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH DIFFERENT CONCENTRATIONS OF SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION OF HUMAN ENAMEL

10.1 Introduction .................................................................................................................. 140
10.2 Aims............................................................................................................................. 141
10.3 Materials and Methods .............................................................................................. 142
10.3.1 ISE Study................................................................................................................. 143
10.3.2 Digital Photographs ............................................................................................... 145
10.3.3 SEM and EDX Analyses ....................................................................................... 145
10.3.4 $^{31}$P and $^{19}$F MAS-NMR Analyses ................................................................. 145

Chapter 9 DISCUSSION OF THE EFFECTS OF TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION OF HAP DISCS AND PROPOSED MODELS FOR MECHANISMS ....... 121

9.1 Effects of Topical Treatment with De-ionised Water on Demineralisation of HAP Discs ......................... 122
9.2 Effects of Topical Treatment with AgNO$_3$ on Demineralisation of HAP Discs and Proposed Mechanistic Models ........................................................................................................ 123
9.2.1 Following Topical Treatment with AgNO$_3$ .................................................................. 123
9.2.2 After Re-immersion of HAP Discs Topically Treated with AgNO$_3$ into Acid ................. 123
9.2.3 After Removal of HAP Discs Topically Treated with AgNO$_3$ from Acid ...................... 125
9.2.4 Analysis of the Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatment with AgNO$_3$ on Demineralisation of HAP Discs ........................................................................................................... 127
9.2.5 Conclusions ............................................................................................................. 128
9.3 Effects of Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$_]$F$ on Demineralisation of HAP Discs and Proposed Mechanistic Models ........................................................................................................ 129
9.3.1 Following Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$_]$F$ ............................................. 129
9.3.2 After Re-immersion of HAP Discs Topically Treated with AgF, and Ag[NH$_3$_]$F$ into Acid ...................................................................................................................... 130
9.3.3 After Removal of HAP Discs Topically Treated with AgF, and Ag[NH$_3$_]$F$ from Acid 134
9.3.4 Analysis of the Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$_]$F$ on Demineralisation of HAP Discs ........................................................................................................... 136
9.3.5 Conclusions ............................................................................................................. 137
9.4 Difference Between the Effects of Topical Treatments with Riva-SC and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$_]$F$ on Demineralisation of HAP Discs ........................................................................................................... 138
9.5 Conclusions ................................................................................................................. 139
10.3.5 Knoop Micro-Hardness Analysis ................................................................. 146
10.4 Results ........................................................................................................... 148
10.4.1 Ca\(^{2+}\) ISE Study .................................................................................. 148
  10.4.1.1 Summary of the Ca\(^{2+}\) Release from the Enamel Blocks of Each Treatment Group ................................................. 156
10.4.2 Ag\(^{+}\) ISE Study ....................................................................................... 163
  10.4.2.1 Mean [Ag\(^{+}\)] during the post-treatment 4 h periods of Each Treatment Group ...................................................... 170
10.4.3 F\(^{-}\) ISE Study ......................................................................................... 173
  10.4.3.1 Mean [F\(^{-}\)] during the post-treatment 4 h periods of Each Treatment Group ....................................................... 178
10.4.4 Digital Photographs .................................................................................. 181
10.4.5 SEM Images Analysis ............................................................................. 183
10.4.6 EDX Analysis ............................................................................................ 185
10.4.7 \(^{31}\)P MAS-NMR Analysis ....................................................................... 190
10.4.8 \(^{19}\)F MAS-NMR Analysis ....................................................................... 191
10.4.9 Microscopic photographs of Human Enamel Sections ........................... 192
10.4.10 Knoop CSMH profiles of Human Enamel Sections ............................... 194

Chapter 11 DISCUSSION OF THE EFFECTS OF TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION OF HUMAN ENAMEL AND PROPOSED MODELS FOR MECHANISMS ........................................................................................................ 195

11.1 Effects of Topical Treatment with De-ionised Water on Demineralisation of Human Enamel ................................................................................................................. 196
11.2 Effects of Topical Treatment with AgNO\(_3\) on Demineralisation of Human Enamel and Proposed Mechanistic Models ................................................................. 197
  11.2.1 Following Topical Treatment with AgNO\(_3\) ............................................. 197
  11.2.2 After Re-immersion of Human Enamel Topically Treated with AgNO\(_3\) into Acid .................................................. 197
  11.2.3 After Removal of Human Enamel Topically Treated with AgNO\(_3\) from Acid .......................................................... 199
  11.2.4 Analysis of the Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatment with AgNO\(_3\) on Demineralisation of Human Enamel .......... 201
  11.2.5 Conclusions ............................................................................................ 202
11.3 Effects of Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)_2]F on Demineralisation of Human Enamel and Proposed Mechanistic Models ..................................................... 202
  11.3.1 Following Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)_2]F .......................... 202
  11.3.2 After Re-immersion of Human Enamel Topically Treated with AgF and Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)_2]F into Acid ................................................................. 203

VIII
11.3.3 After Removal of Human Enamel Topically Treated with AgF and Ag[ NH₃]₂F from Acid ........................................................................................................................................... 208

11.3.4 Analysis of the Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatments with AgF, Ag[ NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC on Demineralisation of Human Enamel ...................................................................................... 210

11.3.5 Conclusions ................................................................................................................................................................................. 212

11.4 Difference Between the Effects of Topical Treatments with Riva-SC and 3.16 M Ag[ NH₃]₂F on Demineralisation of Human enamel ........................................................................................................... 213

11.5 Conclusions ....................................................................................................................................................................................... 214

Chapter 12 DISCUSSION OF DOSE-RESPONSE EFFECTS OF TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION OF HUMAN ENAMEL AND PROPOSED MODELS FOR MECHANISMS .......................................................................................................................................... 215

12.1 Dose-response Effects of Topical Treatment with AgNO₃ on Demineralisation of Human Enamel and Proposed Mechanistic Models ........................................................................................................... 216

12.1.1 The Dose-response Effects of Ag⁺ on the Dose-response Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatment with AgNO₃ on Enamel Demineralisation ........................................................................ 218

12.2 Dose-response Effects of Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[ NH₃]₂F on Demineralisation of Human Enamel and Proposed Mechanistic Models ................................................................. 221

12.2.1 The Dose-response Effects of Ag⁺ on the Dose-response Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatment with AgF and Ag[ NH₃]₂F on Enamel Demineralisation .............................................. 223

12.2.2 The Dose-response Effects of F⁻ on the Dose-response Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[ NH₃]₂F on Enamel Demineralisation ............................................... 225

12.3 Conclusions ....................................................................................................................................................................................... 229

PART V: DISCUSSION, CONCLUSIONS, FUTURE WORK AND CLINICAL RELEVANCE ................................................................. 230

Chapter 13 DISCUSSION ............................................................................................................................................................................... 231

13.1 Comparison of Effects of Topical Treatments with Silver Compounds on Demineralisation of HAP Discs and Human Enamel ........................................................................................................... 231

13.1.1 Before Topical Treatments with Silver Compounds .............................................................................................................................. 231

13.1.2 Following Topical Treatments with Silver Compounds ..................................................................................................................... 232

13.1.3 After Re-immersion of Topically Treated HAP Discs and Human Enamel into Acids .............................................................................................................................................................................. 232

13.1.4 After Removal of HAP Discs and Human Enamel Topically Treated with Silver Compounds from Acids .................................................................................................................................................. 234

13.2 Clinical Implications of the Dose-response Effects of Topical Treatments with Silver Compounds on Demineralisation of Human Enamel ............................................................................................................... 237

13.2.1 Topical Treatments with Different Concentrations of AgNO₃ on Demineralisation of Human Enamel .................................................................................................................................................... 237

13.2.2 Topical Treatments with Different Concentrations of AgF or Ag[ NH₃]₂F on Demineralisation of Human Enamel .......................................................................................................................................................... 238
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 14 CONCLUSIONS, FUTURE WORK AND CLINICAL RELEVANCE</td>
<td>240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14.1 Conclusions</td>
<td>240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14.2 Future Work</td>
<td>242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14.3 Clinical Relevance</td>
<td>244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PART VI: REFERENCES</td>
<td>245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PART VII: APPENDIXES</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix A: Tables of SDF studies</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix B: QMUL Skills Points Record</td>
<td>267</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix C: Awards</td>
<td>268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix D: Conference presentations</td>
<td>270</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix E: Published paper and papers in preparation</td>
<td>278</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
List of Figures

Figure 1.1 - Structure of tooth (From Douglass, 2003) ......................................................... 2
Figure 1.2 - Hexagonal unit structure of HAP in human enamel (Adapted from Robinson et al., 2000). .......................................................................................................................... 5
Figure 1.3 - Microstructure of enamel showing hierarchical levels (From Yilmaz et al., 2015) ................................................................................................................................. 6
Figure 2.1 – Aetiology of dental caries (Adapted from Selwitz et al., 2007) ..................... 8
Figure 2.2 - Caries balance (Adapted from Garcia-Godoy and Hicks, 2008) .................... 9
Figure 2.3 - Solubility isotherm of HAP. O: normal intra-oral condition (From Anderson et al., 2001). ....................................................................................................................... 10
Figure 2.4 - Schematic diagrams of enamel caries (Adapted from Robinson et al., 2000). ................................................................................................................................. 11
Figure 2.5 - Causal factors of erosion (Adapted from Magalhaes et al., 2009b). ............ 15
Figure 2.6 - Degree of saturation plotted against pH with respect to HAP and FAP at certain salivary concentration. FAP can still be formed under carious condition while neither HAP or FAP can be formed under erosive pH (Adapted from Meurman and ten Cate, 1996). .......................................................................................................................... 15
Figure 2.7 - (a) Schematic of erosive lesion: O = outer surface; S = sound enamel. (b) Schematic of carious lesion: SL = surface layer; L: lesion; P: prisms (Adapted from Arends and ten Cate, 1981). ........................................................................................................ 16
Figure 2.8 – Honeycomb erosion lesion (From Wang et al., 2006). ................................. 17
Figure 2.9 – Schematic representation of F absorb onto enamel surface, which attract Ca$^{2+}$ and PO$_{4}^{3-}$, to form an insoluble FAP (or FHA) veneer (From Featherstone, 2008). ........................................................................................................ 21
Figure 3.1 – Reaction between AgNO$_{3}$ and HAP. The PO$_{4}^{3-}$ released from demineralising enamel can be preserved by the formation of Ag$_{3}$PO$_{4}$ (Adapted from Yamaga et al., 1972). ........................................................................................................ 24
Figure 3.2 – Black staining of Ag[NH$_{3}$]$_{2}$F treated teeth (From Mei et al., 2016). ........ 27
Figure 3.3 – Reaction between Ag[NH$_{3}$]$_{2}$F and HAP. The Ca$^{2+}$ and PO$_{4}^{3-}$ released from demineralising enamel can be preserved by the formation of CaF$_{2}$ and Ag$_{3}$PO$_{4}$, respectively (Adapted from Yamaga et al., 1972) ........................................................................ 30
Figure 5.1 – Schematic representation of a SMR cell containing a specimen. .................. 36
Figure 5.2 – Schematic representation of the SMR apparatus. .......................................... 37
Figure 5.3 - An ISE calibration curve (From Wroblewski, 2005). ...................................... 38
Figure 5.4 - Schematic representation of an ISE system (From Harvey, 2016). ............... 39
Figure 5.5 - Temperature effects on the slope of the calibration curve of a single charged ion (Adapted from all-about-pH.com, 2017). ................................................................. 42
Figure 5.6 - Change in the projected HAP disc mineral mass content in pH 4.0 acetic acid over 24 h with (a) 100 %, (b) 50 % and (c) 10 % sampling frequency of data. Blue dots: one StdErr away from trendline; Green dots: two StdErr away from trendline; Yellow dots: three StdErr away from trendline (From Lingawi, 2012). ........................................ 44
Figure 5.7 – Change in the calcium loss from an HAP disc in pH 4.0 acetic acid (a) before (Blue dots) and (b) after (Red dots) topical treatment. The difference between the gradient of the two calcium loss trendlines (0.32 X 10$^{-3}$) is detected (Green dots). 45
**Figure 5.8** - Schematic representation of SEM (From Schweitzer, 2014)................................. 47
**Figure 5.9** - Schematic representation of EDX (From ACMAL, 2014)................................. 48
**Figure 5.10** - Schematic representation of NMR apparatus (From Robert, 1959)........... 48
**Figure 5.11** – Deconvolution of a $^{19}$F MAS-NMR spectra of HAP, and of human enamel powders treated with amine fluoride (From Gerth et al., 2007). .................................................. 50
**Figure 5.12** – Taking the microscopic photographs through the microscope of the Knoop micro-hardness tester using a camera................................................................. 51
**Figure 5.13** – Typical microscopic photographs of a tooth with Knoop indentations on a dentine specimen (From Chu and Lo, 2008a)................................................................. 51
**Figure 5.14** – Diagrams of the Knoop indenter (From England, 2013)................................. 52

**Figure 6.1** – Half-varnished porous HAP discs................................................................. 57
**Figure 6.2** – Two setups of the study ISE at room temperature........................................... 59
**Figure 6.3** - Calibration curve of Ca$^{2+}$ ISE. LLOD = lower limit of detection. ............... 61
**Figure 6.4** - Typical data collected from one HAP disc with additions of (a) 1.8 ppm Zn$^{2+}$ and (b) 107 ppm Zn$^{2+}$ groups................................................................. 63
**Figure 6.5** - Typical data collected from one HAP disc with additions of (a) 2.3 ppm F$^{-}$ and (b) 45.2 ppm F$^{-}$ groups................................................................. 65
**Figure 6.6** - (a) Log-linear relationship established between mean PRML$^{\text{HAP}}$ and [Zn$^{2+}$]. (b) Log-linear relationship established between mean PRML$^{\text{HAP}}$ and [F$^{-}$]. Error bars show the standard errors. .................................................. 68
**Figure 6.7** – (a) Log-linear relationship established between mean PRML$_{\text{enamel}}$ and [Zn$^{2+}$] (Replotted from Mohammed et al., 2015). (b) Log-linear relationship established between mean PRML$_{\text{enamel}}$ and [F$^{-}$] (Replotted from Mohammed et al., 2014a). Error bars show the standard errors. .................................................. 69

**Figure 7.1** – The SMR environmental cell containing an enamel block............................. 77
**Figure 7.2** – Area scanning of an enamel block. The coloured scale (on right) represents the projected mineral mass (g*cm$^{-2}$) in the sample. The white crosses show the three scan points. .................................................. 78
**Figure 7.3** – Trendlines of the mineral loss per unit area (g*cm$^{-2}$) measured at the scan point 3 for 0.0 ppm Ag$^{+}$ compared to that measured at the same scan point for (a) 0.1 ppm Ag$^{+}$, (b) 9.0 ppm Ag$^{+}$, and (c) 3565.0 ppm Ag$^{+}$.................................................. 81
**Figure 7.4** – The mean PRML$_{\text{enamel}}$ plotted against increasing [Ag$^{+}$] in the demineralisation solution. Error bars show the standard errors. .................................................. 84
**Figure 7.5** – Comparison between the log-linear dose-response effects of Ag$^{+}$ (Blue line) and Zn$^{2+}$ (Red line) (From Mohammed et al., 2015) on enamel demineralisation. Error bars show the standard errors. .................................................. 87
**Figure 7.6** – Schematic representation of the log-linear dependency of the acceleration of enamel demineralisation on [Ag$^{+}$] showing a decreasing number of Ca$^{2+}$ sites can be substituted by Ag$^{+}$ with increasing [Ag$^{+}$]. .................................................. 88

**Figure 8.1** – Nail-varnished porous HAP discs................................................................. 93
**Figure 8.2** – a. Schematic representation of setup of the ISE study at 37+0.3 $^\circ$C; b. Photo of the ISE setup in the study (F ISE was behind Ca$^{2+}$ ISE). .................................................. 95
**Figure 8.3** – Protocol of the ISE study on HAP discs................................................................. 96
**Figure 8.4** - Typical Ca$^{2+}$ release of DW treatment group........................................... 98
**Figure 8.5** - Typical Ca$^{2+}$ release of AgNO$_3$ treatment group....................................... 99
**Figure 8.6** – Typical Ca$^{2+}$ release of AgF treatment group........................................... 100
Ag released into solution. b) Gradually, some Ag following re-immersion back into acid. a) Ag+ loosely attached to HAP disc surfaces is released into solution. b) Gradually, some Ag3PO4 on the HAP disc surface and some Ag+ in the solution are reduced to black metallic silver.

Figure 8.7 - Typical Ca2+ release of Ag[NH3]2F treatment group. ........................................ 101
Figure 8.8 - Typical Ca2+ release of Riva-SC treatment group. ........................................... 102
Figure 8.9 - The mean PRCLHAP of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking line between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups. ........................................................................................................ 104
Figure 8.10 - The mean Ag+ release from HAP discs under pH 4.0 demineralisation before and after treatments with DW, AgNO3, AgF, Ag[NH3]2F and Riva-SC. .............. 105
Figure 8.11 - (a) Mean Rr and (b) mean Rl of the Ag+ release of each treatment group. ................................................................. 106
Figure 8.12 - The [Ag+]4h (ppm) of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors. .................................................................................................................. 107
Figure 8.13 - The mean F release from HAP discs under pH 4.0 demineralisation before and after treatments with DW, AgNO3, AgF, Ag[NH3]2F and Riva-SC. .............. 108
Figure 8.14 - (a) Mean Rr and (b) mean Rl of the F release of each treatment group. ................................................................. 109
Figure 8.15 - The [F]4h (ppm) of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups. ................................................................................... 110
Figure 8.16 - Digital photographs of HAP discs following different treatments in the ISE study. .................................................................................................................. 111
Figure 8.17 - Typical SEM images (5.00 kV, 5000 X) of HAP discs in treatment groups of (a) DW, (b) AgNO3, (c) AgF, (d) Ag[NH3]2F and (e) Riva-SC, after the ISE study ........................................................................................................ 112
Figure 8.18 - The mean atomic percentage of Ag of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups. ................................................................................... 113
Figure 8.19 - The mean atomic percentage of F of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors. ........................................................................................................ 114
Figure 8.20 - 31P MAS–NMR spectra of each treatment group before and after pH 4.0 acid challenge. ........................................................................................................ 116
Figure 8.21 - 19F MAS–NMR spectra of each treatment group before and after pH 4.0 acid challenge. (* = sidebands) ................................................................................... 117
Figure 8.22 - Deconvoluted 19F spectra of (a) HAP + AgF and (b) pH 4.0 HAP + AgF. ........................................................................................................................................... 118
Figure 8.23 - Deconvoluted 19F spectra of (a) HAP + Ag[NH3]2F and (b) pH 4.0 HAP + Ag[NH3]2F ........................................................................................................................................... 119
Figure 8.24 - Deconvoluted 19F spectra of (a) HAP + Riva-SC and (b) pH 4.0 HAP + Riva-SC. ........................................................................................................................................... 120
Figure 9.1 - Schematic representation of an HAP disc topically treated with AgNO3. Ag3PO4 is formed on the HAP disc surface and some Ca2+ in the HAP disc is substituted by Ag+. ........................................................................................................ 123
Figure 9.2 - Schematic representation of an HAP disc topically treated with AgNO3 following re-immersion back into acid. a) Ag+ loosely attached to HAP disc surfaces is released into solution. b) Gradually, some Ag3PO4 on the HAP disc surface and some Ag+ in the solution are reduced to black metallic silver. ........................................................................................................ 125
Figure 9.3 – Schematic representation of an HAP topically treated with AgNO₃ after 4 h demineralisation. Deeper lesions are developed in the Ag⁺ substituted HAP, therefore an uneven demineralised HAP disc surface is observed. Further, all the Ag₃PO₄ is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining. .......................................................... 127

Figure 9.4 – The effects of topical treatment influencing the inhibitory efficacy. ........ 127

Figure 9.5 – Schematic representation of an HAP disc topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F. Ag₃PO₄, CaF₂ and FHA are formed on the HAP disc surface. .................. 129

Figure 9.6 - Schematic representation of an HAP disc topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F following re-immersion back into acid. a) Both Ag⁺ and F⁻ loosely attached to HAP disc surfaces are released into solution. b) Gradually, some Ag₃PO₄ on the HAP disc surface and some Ag⁺ in the solution are reduced to metallic silver, and some CaF₂ on the HAP disc surface is dissolved, providing F⁻ for further formation of FHA. ........................................................................................................ 133

Figure 9.7 - Schematic representation of an HAP topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F after 4 h demineralisation. All the Ag₃PO₄ is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining and most of the CaF₂ is dissolved which favours further formation of FHA. ........................................................................................................ 136

Figure 10.1 – Flowchart of the protocol of the study. .................................................. 142

Figure 10.2 – Nail-varnished human blocks................................................................. 143

Figure 10.3 – (a) Demineralised lesion of enamel block varnished with blue nail lacquer. (b) Resin-embedded block for micro-hardness test. ......................................... 146

Figure 10.4 – Schematic representation of Knoop CSMH........................................ 147

Figure 10.5 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of DW treatment group. ........................................ 148

Figure 10.6 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of 0.75 M AgNO₃ treatment group. .................. 150

Figure 10.7 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of 2.36 M AgNO₃ treatment group. .................. 150

Figure 10.8 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of 3.16 M AgNO₃ treatment group. .................. 150

Figure 10.9 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of 0.75 M AgF treatment group. ....................... 152

Figure 10.10 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of 2.36 M AgF treatment group. ....................... 152

Figure 10.11 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of 3.16 M AgF treatment group. ....................... 152

Figure 10.12 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of 0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment group. ............ 154

Figure 10.13 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of 2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment group. ............ 154

Figure 10.14 - Typical Ca²⁺ release of 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment group. ............ 154

Figure 10.15 – Typical Ca²⁺ release of Riva-SC treatment group. ......................... 155

Figure 10.16 - The mean PRCLₑnamel of 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between treatment groups indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between them. 159

Figure 10.17 – The mean PRCLₑnamel of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO₃ treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 160

Figure 10.18 - A log-linear dose-response relationship between the mean PRCLₑnamel of AgNO₃ and [AgNO₃]. ......................................................................................... 160

Figure 10.19 - The mean PRCLₑnamel of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 160

Figure 10.20 - A log-linear dose-response relationship between the mean PRCLₑnamel of AgF and [AgF]. ......................................................................................... 161

Figure 10.21 - The mean PRCLₑnamel of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups. ......................................................................................... 161
Figure 10.22 - A log-linear dose-response relationship between the mean PRCLenamel of Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F and [Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F]............................................................................................... 163

Figure 10.23 - The mean Ag\(^+\) release from enamel under pH 4.0 demineralisation before and after topical treatments with DW, and 3.16 M silver compounds. .................. 164

Figure 10.24 - The Ag\(^+\) release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO\(_3\) treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 166

Figure 10.25 - The Ag\(^+\) release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 166

Figure 10.26 - The Ag\(^+\) release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 166

Figure 10.27 - (a) Mean R\(_L\) and (b) mean R\(_L\) of the Ag\(^+\) release of DW and 3.16 M treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 168

Figure 10.28 - (a) Mean R\(_L\) and (b) mean R\(_L\) of the Ag\(^+\) release of AgNO\(_3\) treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 169

Figure 10.29 - (a) Mean R\(_L\) and (b) mean R\(_L\) of the Ag\(^+\) release of AgF treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 169

Figure 10.30 - (a) Mean R\(_L\) and (b) mean R\(_L\) of the Ag\(^+\) release of Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 169

Figure 10.31 - The [Ag\(^+\)]\(_{4h}\) (ppm) of 3.16 M AgNO\(_3\), 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups. 171

Figure 10.32 - The [Ag\(^+\)]\(_{4h}\) (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO\(_3\) treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 172

Figure 10.33 - The [Ag\(^+\)]\(_{4h}\) (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 172

Figure 10.34 - The [Ag\(^+\)]\(_{4h}\) (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 172

Figure 10.35 - The mean F\(^-\) release from enamel under pH 4.0 demineralisation before and after topical treatment with DW, and 3.16 M silver compounds. .................. 173

Figure 10.36 - The F\(^-\) release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 174

Figure 10.37 - The F\(^-\) release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 174

Figure 10.38 - (a) Mean R\(_L\) and (b) mean R\(_L\) of the F\(^-\) release of DW and 3.16 M treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 176

Figure 10.39 - (a) Mean R\(_L\) and (b) mean R\(_L\) of the F\(^-\) release of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 177

Figure 10.40 - (a) Mean R\(_L\) and (b) mean R\(_L\) of the F\(^-\) release of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 177

Figure 10.41 - The [F\(^-\)]\(_{4h}\) (ppm) of 3.16 M AgNO\(_3\), 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups. 179

Figure 10.42 - The [F\(^-\)]\(_{4h}\) (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 180

Figure 10.43 - The [F\(^-\)]\(_{4h}\) (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]_2F treatment groups. .................................................................................................................. 180
Figure 10.44 - The colours of enamel treated with DW and Riva-SC following different treatments of the ISE study. ................................................................. 181

Figure 10.45 - The colours of enamel treated with different concentrations of AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F following different treatments of the ISE study. ......................... 182

Figure 10.46 - Typical SEM images of enamel blocks of (a) DW Tx, (b) 0.75 M AgNO₃ Tx, (c) 2.36 M AgNO₃ Tx and (d) 3.16 M AgNO₃ Tx, (e) 0.75 M AgF Tx, (f) 2.36 M AgF Tx and (g) 3.16 M AgF Tx, (h) 0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx, (i) 2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx and (j) 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx, and (k) Riva-SC Tx ................................................................. 184

Figure 10.47 – The mean atomic percentages of Ag of 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups ................................................. 185

Figure 10.48 - The mean atomic percentages of Ag of AgNO₃ treatment groups. ... 187

Figure 10.49 - The mean atomic percentages of Ag of AgF treatment groups. ....... 187

Figure 10.50 - The mean atomic percentages of Ag of Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups. 187

Figure 10.51 - The mean atomic percentages of F of 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups. .................................................................................. 188

Figure 10.52 - The mean atomic percentages of F of AgF treatment groups .......... 189

Figure 10.53 - The mean atomic percentages of F of Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups. 189

Figure 10.54 – ³¹P MAS-NMR spectra of each treatment group before and after pH 4.0 acid challenge. ........................................................................................................... 190

Figure 10.55 – ¹⁹F MAS-NMR spectra of each treatment group before and after pH 4.0 acid challenge. ........................................................................................................... 191

Figure 10.56 - Typical images (40X) of lesions sections of (a) DW Tx, (b) 0.75 M AgNO₃ Tx, (c) 2.36 M AgNO₃ Tx and (d) 3.16 M AgNO₃ Tx, (e) 0.75 M AgF Tx, (f) 2.36 M AgF Tx and (g) 3.16 M AgF Tx, (h) 0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx, (i) 2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx and (j) 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx, and (k) Riva-SC Tx ......................................................... 193

Figure 10.57 – Knoop CSMH of (a) DW Tx, (b ~ d) AgNO₃ Tx, (e ~ g) AgF Tx and (h ~ j) Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx in different concentrations, and (k) Riva-SC Tx .................................................... 194

Figure 11.1 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃. Ag₃PO₄ is formed on the enamel surface and some Ca²⁺ in the enamel mineral is substituted by Ag⁺. .................................................................................. 197

Figure 11.2 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ following re-immersion back into acid. After immersion of a) Ag⁺ loosely attached to enamel surfaces is released into solution. b) Gradually, some Ag₃PO₄ on the enamel surface and some Ag⁺ in the solution are reduced to black metallic silver. ..................................................................................................................... 199

Figure 11.3 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with AgNO₃ after 4 h demineralisation. Deeper lesions are developed in the substituted enamel, therefore uneven demineralised enamel surface is observed. Further, all the Ag₃PO₄ is reduced to black metallic silver causing black staining. .................................................. 201

Figure 11.4 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F. Ag₃PO₄, CaF₂ and FHA are formed on the enamel surface. .......................... 204

Figure 11.5 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F following re-immersion back into acid. a) Both Ag⁺ and F⁻ loosely attached
to enamel surface are released into solution. b) Gradually, some Ag$_3$PO$_4$ on the enamel surface and some Ag$^+$ in the solution are reduced to metallic silver, and some CaF$_2$ on the enamel surface is dissolved, providing F$^-$ for further formation of FHA.

Figure 11.6 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F after 4 h demineralisation. All the Ag$_3$PO$_4$ is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining and most of the CaF$_2$ is dissolved which favours further formation of FHA.

Figure 12.1 – Schematic representation of proposed dose-response inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgNO$_3$ on human enamel demineralisation. Following topical treatment with AgNO$_3$, both formation of Ag$_3$PO$_4$ and Ag$^+$ substituted enamel increases with increasing concentration. After acid challenge, Ag$_3$PO$_4$ is reduced to metallic silver. The enamel surface with more Ag$^+$ substituted enamel is more destructed. Further, some metallic silver is lost due to the loss of enamel structure.

Figure 12.2 - Comparison of the log-linear relationship between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of AgNO$_3$ topical treatment and the [Ag$^+$]$^{4h}$ (Green line), and the log-linear relationship between the mean PRML$_{enamel}$ of Ag$^+$ and the [Ag$^+$] in solution (Grey line). Error bars show the standard errors.

Figure 12.3 – The difference between the inhibitory efficacy (PRCL$_{enamel}$) of AgNO$_3$ (Green dots) observed in ISE study and the theoretical inhibitory efficacy (PRML$_{enamel}$) of Ag$^+$ (Red line) and the log-linear relationship (Blue line) and the log-linear relationship of Ag$^+$ reported in the SMR study.

Figure 12.4 – Schematic representation of proposed dose-response inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on human enamel demineralisation. Following topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, the formation of Ag$_3$PO$_4$, CaF$_2$ and FHA increases with increasing concentration. After acid challenge, Ag$_3$PO$_4$ is reduced to metallic silver and CaF$_2$ is dissolved for further formation of FHA.

Figure 12.5 - Comparison of the log-linear relationship between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of AgF topical treatment and the [Ag$^+$]$^{4h}$ (Red line) and the log-linear relationship between the mean PRML$_{enamel}$ of Ag$^+$ and the [Ag$^+$] in solution (Grey line). Error bars show the standard errors.

Figure 12.6 - Comparison of the log-linear relationship between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatment and the [Ag$^+$]$^{4h}$ (Blue line) and the log-linear relationship between the mean PRML$_{enamel}$ of Ag$^+$ and the [Ag$^+$] in solution (Grey line). Error bars show the standard errors.

Figure 12.7 - Comparison of the log-linear relationship between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of AgF topical treatment and the [F$^-$]$^{4h}$ (Red line) and the log-linear relationship between the mean PRML$_{enamel}$ of F$^-$ and the [F$^-$] in solution (Purple line). Error bars show the standard errors.

Figure 12.8 - Comparison of the log-linear relationship between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatment and the [F$^-$]$^{4h}$ (Blue line) and the log-linear relationship between the mean PRML$_{enamel}$ of F$^-$ and the [F$^-$] in solution (Purple line). Error bars show the standard errors.

Figure 12.9 - The difference between the inhibitory efficacy (PRCL$_{enamel}$) of AgF (Red dots) observed in ISE study and the theoretical inhibitory efficacy (PRML$_{enamel}$) of [F$^-$]$^{4h}$...
(Purple dots) obtained from dose-response PRML_{enamel} of F reported in the SMR study.

Figure 12.10 - The difference between the inhibitory efficacy (PRCL_{enamel}) of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Blue dots) observed in ISE study and the theoretical inhibitory efficacy (PRML$_{enamel}$) of [F]$_{4h}$ (Purple dots) obtained from dose-response PRML$_{enamel}$ of F reported in the SMR study. ................................. 228

Figure 13.1 – Mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ and mean PRCL$_{HAP}$ of all treatment groups. ........... 232
Figure 13.2 – [Ag$^+$]$_{4h}$ of enamel and HAP disc treatment groups. ......................... 233
Figure 13.3 - [F]$_{4h}$ of enamel and HAP disc treatment groups. ......................... 234
Figure 13.4 - Mean percentages of Ag detected on HAP disc and human enamel surfaces. .................................................................................................................. 235
Figure 13.5 – Mean percentages of F detected on HAP disc and human enamel surfaces. .................................................................................................................. 236
Figure 13.6 – Dose-response effects of topical treatments with AgNO$_3$ (Green line), AgF (Red line) and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Blue line) on demineralisation of human enamel. .... 237
List of Tables

Table 6.1 - RCL_{HAP} before and after Zn^{2+} addition of the Fig. 6.4. ................................. 63
Table 6.2 - RCL_{HAP} before and after F^{−} addition of the Fig. 6.5........................................ 65
Table 6.3 – The RCL_{HAP} and PRCL_{HAP} of every HAP disc measured at each [Zn^{2+}] ....... 66
Table 6.4 - The RCL_{HAP} and PRCL_{HAP} of every HAP disc measured at each [F]. .......... 67
Table 7.1 – The RML_{enamel} and PRML_{enamel} measured at each point for every [Ag^{+}] in solution. PRML_{enamel} highlighted in red indicate that the RML_{enamel} were not significantly different from the RML_{enamel} measured at 0 ppm Ag^{+}. .................................................. 83
Table 8.1 – Compositions of treatment groups. ........................................................................ 94
Table 8.2 - The RCL_{HAP} before and after DW topical treatment of the Fig. 8.4 ............. 98
Table 8.3 - The RCL_{HAP} before and after AgNO_{3} topical treatment of the Fig. 8.5 ........ 99
Table 8.4 - The RCL_{HAP} before and after AgF topical treatment of the Fig. 8.6 .......... 100
Table 8.5 - The RCL_{HAP} before and after Ag[NaH_{2}]F topical treatment of the Fig. 8.7. 101
Table 8.6 - The RCL_{HAP} before and after Riva-SC topical treatment of the Fig. 8.8 .... 102
Table 8.7 – The RCL_{HAP} and PRCL_{HAP} of every HAP disc in each treatment group... 103
Table 8.8 – Mean R_{i} and mean R_{L} of the Ag^{+} release following each treatment........ 106
Table 8.9 – The mean [Ag^{+}] during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated HAP samples into acids ([Ag^{+}]_{in}) of each treatment group........ 107
Table 8.10 – Mean R_{i} and mean R_{L} of the F^{−} release following each treatment........ 109
Table 8.11 – The mean [F] during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated HAP samples into acids ([F]_{in}) of each treatment group......... 110
Table 10.1 – Compositions of treatment groups. ................................................................. 144
Table 10.2 – The RCL_{enamel} before and after DW topical treatment of the Fig. 10.5. ... 148
Table 10.3 - The RCL_{enamel} before and after AgNO_{3} topical treatments of the Fig. 10.6 ~ 10.8 .......................................................................................................................... 149
Table 10.4 - The RCL_{enamel} before and after AgF topical treatments of the Fig. 10.9 ~ 10.11. ........................................................................................................................................ 151
Table 10.5 - The RCL_{enamel} before and after Ag[NaH_{2}]F topical treatments of the Fig. 10.12 ~ 10.14 ...................................................................................................................... 153
Table 10.6 - The RCL_{enamel} before and after Riva-SC topical treatment of the Fig. 10.15. ........................................................................................................................................ 155
Table 10.7 - The RCL_{enamel} and PRCL_{enamel} of every Enamel in each treatment group. ................................................................................................................................. 157
Table 10.8 – Mean R_{i} and mean R_{L} of the Ag^{+} release following each treatment...... 167
Table 10.9 – The mean [Ag^{+}] during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated enamel blocks into acids ([Ag^{+}]_{in}) of each treatment group. ... 170
Table 10.10 – Mean R_{i} and mean R_{L} of the F^{−} release following each treatment....... 175
Table 10.11 – The mean [F] during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated enamel blocks into acids ([F]_{in}) of each treatment group. .... 178
### Abbreviations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AHF</td>
<td>ammonium hexafluorosilicate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>APF</td>
<td>acidulated phosphate fluoride</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHX</td>
<td>chlorhexidine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CPP-ACP</td>
<td>casein phosphopeptide amorphous calcium phosphate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CSMH</td>
<td>cross-sectional micro-hardness profiling</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DCPD</td>
<td>dicalcium phosphate dihydrate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DMFT</td>
<td>number of permanent teeth decayed, missing and filled teeth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DW</td>
<td>de-ionised water</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EDJ</td>
<td>enamel-Dentine junction</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EDX</td>
<td>energy-dispersive X-ray analysis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fig.</td>
<td>figure</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FAP</td>
<td>fluorapatite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FHA</td>
<td>fluorohydroxyapatite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GVHD</td>
<td>chronic oral graft versus host disease</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HAP</td>
<td>hydroxyapatite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>hour</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ip</td>
<td>ion product</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ISE</td>
<td>ion selective electrode</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$K_{sp}$</td>
<td>solubility product constant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$K_a$</td>
<td>acid dissociation constant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LLOD</td>
<td>lower limit of detection</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MBC</td>
<td>minimum bactericide concentration</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MIC</td>
<td>minimum inhibition concentration</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MID</td>
<td>minimal Intervention Dentistry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAS-NMR</td>
<td>magic angle spinning-nuclear magnetic resonance</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>min</td>
<td>minute</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mM</td>
<td>millimolar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mV</td>
<td>millivoltage</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NCOP</td>
<td>non-contact optical profilometry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRCL</td>
<td>percentage of reduction in the rate of calcium loss</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRML</td>
<td>percentage of reduction in the rate of mineral loss</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCL</td>
<td>rate of calcium loss</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RML</td>
<td>rate of mineral loss</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SC</td>
<td>silver capsule of Riva Star (SDI Ltd)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>--------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SDF</td>
<td>silver diammine fluoride</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SDS</td>
<td>safety data sheet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SE</td>
<td>standard error</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SEM</td>
<td>scanning electron microscope</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S.m.</td>
<td>Streptococcus mutans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SMR</td>
<td>scanning microradiography</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tx</td>
<td>treatment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WHO</td>
<td>World Health Organization</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XRD</td>
<td>X-ray diffraction analysis</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PART I: LITERATURE REVIEW, AIMS AND OBJECTIVES
1.1 Human Tooth Structure

The human tooth is composed of enamel, dentine and cementum as mineralised hard tissues, and dental pulp as soft tissue (Fig. 1.1) (Douglass, 2003). In the crown, enamel is the hardest tissue in the human body (He and Swain, 2007), covering a thick dentinal layer comprising the bulk of tooth, and in the root, dentine is surrounded by cementum (Turp and Alt, 1998). Enamel contains the highest apatite mineral (96 wt%), followed by dentine (70 wt%), while cementum (65 wt%) is similar to bone (Driessens, 1980; Curzon and Featherstone, 1983). As enamel is the outermost dental mineral of the tooth exposed to acid challenges, it is discussed in this section.
1.2 Human Enamel

Enamel is acellular, non-sensitive and cannot becellularly regenerated once lost. The structure comprises prismatic units with a hierarchical construction (Boyde, 1964). Enamel is thickest at the cusps (2.5 mm) and thinnest at the cervical margins. Due to its high mineral density, the porosity of enamel is extremely low (Berkovitz, 2011).

Incipient caries always starts from enamel, as it is the first surface suffering the acid attacks from organic acids. These acids diffuse through the enamel pores, and selectively dissolve components with higher solubility, and gradually penetrate into underlying dentine. Remineralisation of the demineralised lesion is possible under certain conditions (Featherstone, 2008).

1.2.1 Composition of Human Enamel

The mineral component of human enamel is a calcium-deficient carbonated hydroxyapatite (LeGeros, 1991; Weatherell, 1975). Mature human enamel is composed of hydroxyapatite (HAP) (92 ~ 96 wt%), water (2 ~ 3 wt%), carbonate (2 ~ 3 wt%), trace elements (sodium, chloride, magnesium, potassium and zinc, 1 wt%), fluoride (0.01 ~ 0.05 wt%) and proteins and lipids (< 1 wt%) (Hicks et al., 2004; LeGeros, 1991). Generally, the concentration of F- is highest (thousands of ppm) in the surface and decreases toward EDJ (Enamel-Dentine junction), whereas, the concentration gradients of CO3²- and Mg²⁺ are reverse (Robinson et al., 2000). The organic components and water are mainly located in the inter-prismatic regions of enamel (Berkovitz, 2011; Boyde, 1964). As the distributions of these components in enamel are not homogeneous, the response of enamel to physical and chemical challenges varies in different regions (He and Swain, 2008; Simmer et al., 2010; Zhang et al., 2014).

Developmental processes in enamel can profoundly affect the resultant composition by ion substitution. CO3²- can replace OH⁻ or PO4³⁻ groups, which depends on the pHCO2 during the amelogenesis. Further, Ca²⁺ can also be partially
replaced by Mg$^{2+}$ up to 0.3% (Robinson et al., 2000). As both CO$_3^{2-}$ and Mg$^{2+}$ are destabilising agents, the regions with higher concentrations of these ions, such as the core of enamel prism (Boyde, 1979), tend to dissolve faster under demineralisation (Robinson et al., 1995). On the other hand, F$^{-}$ is a stabilising agent. As FAP (or FHA) has stronger hydrogen bonds within the lattice than HAP, which stabilises the structure of fluoridated enamel, it is more acid-resistant than HAP (Garcia-Godoy and Hicks, 2008; Hicks et al., 2003; Robinson, 2009). F$^{-}$ can replace the OH$^{-}$ of the enamel during post-eruption maturation, or after contact between enamel and topical fluoride supplements, to form fluorapatite (FAP) or fluorohydroxyapatite (FHA) (Hicks et al., 2003). The incorporation of F$^{-}$ into enamel can be up to a depth of 100 μm (Arends and Christoffersen, 1990; Lynch, 2013), whose amounts vary with the fluoride supplements that the enamel is exposed to (Schamschula et al., 1982). The difference in the F$^{-}$ concentration in the enamel surfaces between non-fluoridated areas and fluoridated areas could be up to 1000 ppm (Weatherell et al., 1977).

1.2.2 Mineral Structure of Human Enamel

**Fig. 1.2** shows the projected crystal structure of stoichiometric HAP in human enamel viewed down the c-axis OH$^{-}$ column (Robinson et al., 2000). The ion arrangement is shown as one OH$^{-}$ surrounded by three Ca$^{2+}$ (Ca II), with three PO$_4^{3-}$ outside these ions compassing them. These ions are enclosed by six Ca$^{2+}$ (Ca I) arranged in a hexagon, called the hexagonal HAP unit cell.
A hexagonal enamel crystallite (50 nm in width and 25 nm in thickness), composed of millions of hexagonal HAP unit cells (Robinson et al., 2000; Lu et al., 2011), is the basic structural element (level 0) of enamel mineral (Yilmaz et al., 2015). During amelogenesis, hexagonal enamel crystallites are aligned along the c-axis under the guidance of proteins (Berkovitz, 2011; Robinson et al., 2000) and bundled into prisms (5 µm in diameter) and inter-prismatic matrix (level 1). The crystallites in the central part of a rod are aligned with the longitudinal axis of the prism, whereas, those at the sides are aligned in a divergent angle (nearly 60°) to the longitudinal axis of the prisms (He and Swain, 2007; He and Swain, 2008). The arrangement of multiple prisms (level 2) in cross-section appears as “keyholes”, whereas, in the longitudinal view, the layout is more parallel. These arrangements (level 3) can be categorised as radial enamel in the outer layers and decussating enamel in the inner layers. Finally, different arrangements of enamel constitute the hierarchical structure of enamel (enamel pattern, level 4) to meet the mechanical and physical requirements of mastication in an oral environment (Fig. 1.3) (Berkovitz, 2011; Cui and Ge, 2007; Yilmaz et al., 2015).
1.3 Hydroxyapatite Discs as a Model System for Human enamel

As hydroxyapatite (HAP) is the main constituent of human enamel (LeGeros, 1991; Busch et al., 2001), compressed HAP discs have been used in many studies to simulate the demineralisation of human enamel (e.g., Anderson et al., 2004a; do Amaral et al., 2016; Jones et al., 2013; Kosoric et al., 2010). HAP discs exhibit similar demineralisation kinetics to that of human enamel and can be used as a model for human enamel in order to understand the formation of in vivo dental caries or erosion (Shellis et al., 2010).

The major difference between human enamel mineral and HAP is the presence of about 3 wt% carbonate (Mukundan et al., 1999), which leads to faster dissolution of human enamel than HAP discs (Anderson et al., 2004b; Shellis et al., 2010). Further, HAP discs do not have the complex biological structures (see Section 1.2.2) of human enamel (Anderson et al., 2004b; Yilmaz et al., 2015). However, as HAP discs are easy to obtain and have homogeneous chemical composition and structure, compared to human enamel minerals (Elliott, 1994; Lingawi, 2012), they have been accepted as suitable analogues for dental enamel mineral.
Chapter 2 DENTAL CARIES AND EROSION

2.1 Enamel Demineralisation

Enamel demineralisation results from two dental diseases, dental caries and erosion (Abou Neel et al., 2016). The source of acids in caries is from bacterial metabolism, while erosion is from acids without bacterial involvement (Selwitz et al., 2007; Ren, 2011). The difference between caries and erosion is seen in the structure of each. Caries is characterised by subsurface demineralisation resulting from the exposure to pH 4.5 ~ 6.5 organic acids following fermentation in the plaque. Whereas, erosion is characterised by surface softening resulting from exposure to pH 2.0 ~ 4.0 acidic diet, leading to the destruction of weakened inter-prismatic regions (Arends and ten Cate, 1981).

Despite the differences between dental caries and erosion mentioned above, the development of these two dental lesions follows the same chemical reaction (Lussi, 2006a). As the pH decreases, trivalent phosphate ions (PO$_4^{3-}$) and hydroxyl ions (OH$^-$) of the enamel HAP will be protonated to divalent phosphate ions (HPO$_4^{2-}$) and water (H$_2$O), respectively. This transformation results in the formation of more soluble dicalcium phosphate dihydrate (CaHPO$_4$ · 2H$_2$O), so-called brushite, and later causes the weakening of the bonding between PO$_4^{3-}$ and Ca$^{2+}$. The consequent Ca$^{2+}$ loss from enamel leads to enamel demineralisation (Robinson et al., 1995).

2.2 Dental Caries

Dental caries is the most common chronic disease worldwide (Moreira, 2012). It is characterised by localised subsurface destruction of enamel arising from organic acids generated by bacterial metabolism within the biofilm (Newbrun, 1982; Selwitz et al., 2007).
2.2.1 Aetiology of Dental Caries

Caries is a multifactorial disease (Hunter, 1988), whose development involves cariogenic microorganisms, environmental triggers and a susceptible host (Anderson, 2002; Marsh, 2009). Streptococcus mutans (S.m.), Streptococcus sobrinus and Lactobacillus acidophilus are the major cariogenic bacteria (Kidd, 2005). They rapidly produce organic acids such as lactic and acetic acids by the fermentation of ingested carbohydrate (Bowen, 2013; Distler and Kroncke, 1980; Sheiham, 2001). Modern refined foods contain a high amount of sugars, especially sucrose, and can promote the production of these organic acids. Therefore, the constant intake of sugary food is a risk factor of dental caries (Marsh, 2009). Defects in tooth structure is also a risk factor, as they make the tooth more susceptible to acid challenge (Selwitz et al., 2007). The progression of caries is associated with time. The longer the time period that the tooth is in acidic conditions, the more destructive the dental lesion will be (Maya et al., 2015) (Fig. 2.1).

![Figure 2.1 – Aetiology of dental caries (Adapted from Selwitz et al., 2007).]
As saliva has sufficient mineral concentrations to keep the fluid saturated with respect to the dental mineral, the integrity of enamel in contact with saliva is maintained (Garcia-Godoy and Hicks, 2008). Further, as the presence of $F^-$ in saliva is beneficial for the formation of less soluble FAP on the enamel surface (mainly HAP), the dental mineral can be further protected (Robinson, 2009; Miura et al., 1993). Therefore, the presence of saliva is a protective factor of dental caries, and the decrease in secretion of saliva is a risk factor. Other factors such as behaviour, socio-economic status and education level can also affect the risk of dental caries (Fig. 2.1) (Fejerskov, 2004; Selwitz et al., 2007).

Consequently, a caries balance can be established (Fig 2.2) based on the interaction between pathological and protective factors (Featherstone, 2004; Garcia-Godoy and Hicks, 2008). On one side, it is the pathological factors such as acidogenic bacteria, impaired salivary function and frequent carbohydrate consumption, resulting in enamel demineralisation. On the other side, it is the protective factors such as saliva flow, antibacterial effects, fluoride supplements and sufficient mineral concentrations, resulting in enamel remineralisation. The dynamic equilibrium between the pathological and protective factors determines
the final outcome of the carious lesion, which may be progression, reversal, or maintenance (Featherstone, 2004).

2.2.2 Chemistry of Dental Caries

The solubility of enamel mineral (mainly HAP, Ca$_{10}$(PO$_4$)$_6$(OH)$_2$) increases 10 times with a decrease of 1 pH unit in the solution (Buzalaf et al., 2011). In the oral cavity, whenever the acidity of saliva is below the critical pH of HAP, it becomes under-saturated with respect to enamel mineral, leading to dental demineralisation (Dawes, 2003; Ehrlich et al., 2009). However, whenever the saliva acidity is above the critical pH, remineralisation of the dental mineral occurs (Fig. 2.3) (Anderson et al., 2001). Even though the generally recognised critical pH is 5.5, the actual value depends on the concentrations (activities) of OH$^-$, Ca$^{2+}$ and PO$_4^{3-}$ in the solution (Anderson et al., 2001; Dawes, 2003). With sufficient supply of Ca$^{2+}$, enamel will not dissolve even under low pH, as long as the ion product (Ip) is equal or greater than the solubility product constant ($K_{sp}$) of HAP (suggested to be $pK_{sp} = 117.2$) (Anderson et al., 2001; Dawes, 2003; Miura et al., 1993).

![Figure 2.3 - Solubility isotherm of HAP. O: normal intra-oral condition (From Anderson et al., 2001).](image)
Before bacterially generated organic acids become in contact with the tooth, the acids diffuse through the dental plaque into the defects on the enamel surface, followed by demineralisation of the underlying mineral structure (Rosin-Grget et al., 2013). The carious lesion is usually initiated in the most accessible and soluble periphery and cores of the prisms (Featherstone, 1977). This is due to the loose arrangements of the crystals and the high content of soluble substitutions like CO$_3^{2-}$ and Mg$^{2+}$ in these areas (Boyde, 1979). Next, the acid then penetrates via cross-striations and pores to the prism body and interprismatic area (Featherstone, 2008; Marshall and Lawless, 1981; Robinson et al., 2000).

However, the development of a carious lesion is not only about the advancement of the acid, but also about the diffusion of dissolved Ca$^{2+}$ and PO$_4^{3-}$ back to the surface region, which induces the formation of a surface zone by mineral re-deposition (Hicks et al., 2004; Moreno and Zahradnik, 1979; Rosin-Grget et al., 2013). There are four zones that can be observed under the inspection of caries using polarising light microscopy; translucent zone, dark zone, body of lesion and surface zone (Fig 2.4) (Moreno and Zahradnik, 1979; Robinson et al., 2000; Silverstone, 1981).

![Figure 2.4 - Schematic diagrams of enamel caries (Adapted from Robinson et al., 2000).](image-url)
2.2.2.1 Translucent zone

The translucent zone is the first sign of caries lesion which can be detected by visual examination. It contains few but large pores with 1 ~ 2 % mineral loss. Preliminarily, the organic matrix is decomposed followed by the dissolution of the mineral material, which mostly takes place at inter-crystalline and inter-prismatic regions leading to the formation of channels for ion diffusion (Robinson et al., 2000).

2.2.2.2 Dark zone

Dark zone is characterised by the smaller pores in addition to the big ones. There is an increased porosity of 5 ~ 10 % in the area. It has been postulated that those smaller pores are the consequence of slight remineralisation narrowing the large pores. Therefore, it implies that both demineralisation and remineralisation occur at the same time during the process of caries (Robinson et al., 2000).

2.2.2.3 Body of lesion

In the body of lesion, there is a higher porosity up to 25 ~ 50 %. It represents the final stage of the enamel demineralisation after the continuous enlargement of pores which ends up with cavitation. The concentrations of CO$_3^{2-}$ and Mg$^{2+}$ are lower, whilst that of F$^-$ is higher in this zone, which facilitates the lateral enlargement of crystallites. This phenomenon further indicates that remineralisation happens during the carious process (Pearce et al., 1995; Robinson et al., 2000).
2.2.2.4 Surface zone

The surface zone remains relatively intact much longer than the other zones under demineralisation, which means that it might be preserved or benefited from the re-deposition process. The porosity of this zone is 1 ~ 2 % which is similar to that of the sound enamel (Anderson et al., 2004a; Robinson et al., 2000). It has been proposed that due to the higher content of F- in superficial area of enamel, and the covering of pellicle which retards the mineral loss, the acid may penetrate into the deeper layers of enamel to preferentially dissolve more soluble subsurface substances (Matinlinna, 2015; Robinson et al., 1995).

Subsurface lesions may be attributed to the re-deposition of mineral from the deeper dissolved regions (Moreno and Zahradnik, 1974). Together with components from the plaque, three solid phases including HAP, dicalcium phosphate dihydrate (DCPD), and FAP can achieve an equilibrium with the aqueous phase in the pores, leading to remineralisation at the surface zone (Fig. 2.4) (Moreno and Zahradnik, 1974). Supersaturation of oral fluids with respect to FAP (pK_{sp} = 121.2) is crucial for the maintenance of the surface zone (Buzalaf et al., 2011; Miura et al., 1993), and more supersaturated the solution with respect to FAP, thicker the surface layer will be (Kidd, 2005). A natural enamel carious lesion has been reported to have a surface layer with a thickness of surface zone in the range of 35 ~ 130 µm (Cochrane et al., 2012).

2.2.3 Epidemiology of Dental Caries

It has been reported that, in 2012, 60 ~ 90 % of children in school and almost 100 % of adults experience dental cavitation worldwide (Moreira, 2012). Further, approximately 92 % of the adults aged 20 to 64 have been reported to have dental decay in the permanent teeth, while 42 % of the children with age 2 to 11 had caries in their deciduous teeth (NIH, 2014). The worldwide average of DMFT (number of permanent teeth decayed, missing and filled teeth) is 2.11 ± 1.32 (Moreira, 2012). Even though there has been a dramatic decline in DMFT number
and prevalence for the past several decades (Moreira, 2012), dental caries is still a prevalent oral disease in several countries including USA, UK, China, Brazil, Mexico, Norway, Argentina and Taiwan (Bagramian et al., 2009).

2.3 Dental Erosion

Dental erosion is defined as the loss of dental hard tissue through chemical dissolution by acids of non-bacterial origin (Amaechi and Higham, 2005; Lussi, 2006b; Magalhaes et al., 2009a). It is a surface phenomenon showing bulk substance loss, together with a smaller softened surface layer (Magalhaes et al., 2011).

2.3.1 Aetiology of Dental Erosion

Dental erosion is a multi-factorial disease, whose development involves the direct interaction between the tooth surface and the erosive solution (Lussi, 2006a). Further, personal habits and lifestyles can affect the development of dental erosion (Lussi, 2006a; Donovan, 2011; Magalhaes et al., 2009b; Gupta et al., 2009). It has been proposed that the determinant factors of the dental erosion progression include chemical, biological and behaviour factors, while physiologic health, educational level and socio-economic status are the modifying factors (Fig 2.5) (Donovan, 2011; Magalhaes et al., 2009b; Meurman and ten Cate, 1996). In this section, the chemical factors are discussed.
2.3.2 Chemistry of Dental Erosion

Dental erosion is caused by much lower pH of acids than caries, below the critical pH of FAP (= 4.5) (Fig. 2.6) (Magalhaes et al., 2009b; Meurman and ten Cate, 1996).
1996). Therefore, as the erosive lesion is developed in a solution under-saturated with respect to both HAP and FAP, no surface layer can be formed in the erosive lesion (Fig. 2.7) (Arends and ten Cate, 1981; Larsen, 1974; Larsen, 1990). After erosive acid comes into contact with enamel, the dissociated H⁺ dissolves enamel crystals, initially from the enamel sheath area to prism core, and subsequently diffuses to the inter-prismatic area (Donovan, 2011; Lussi, 2006a). This results in a “honeycomb” appearance in prismatic enamel (Fig. 2.8) (Lussi, 2006b; Wang et al., 2006).

![Figure 2.7](image)

Figure 2.7 - (a) Schematic of erosive lesion: O = outer surface; S = sound enamel. (b) Schematic of carious lesion: SL = surface layer; L: lesion; P: prisms (Adapted from Arends and ten Cate, 1981).
Erosive acids can be categorised into extrinsic acids such as fresh fruits, fruit juice, soft drinks, acidic mouth rinse, acidic drugs and acidic industrial vapour (Linnett and Seow, 2001; Richards, 2016; Shaw and Smith, 1999; Ren, 2011), and intrinsic acids such as gastric contents (Linnett and Seow, 2001; Shaw and Smith, 1999). Fruits commonly have carboxylic and citric acids, and vinegar has acetic acid, while carbonic and phosphoric acids are usually present in soft drinks (Abou Neel et al., 2016; White et al., 2001). It has been proposed that the pH of extrinsic acids varies between 2.5 ~ 4.0, while that of gastric acid is about 1.2 (Magalhaes et al., 2009b). However, pH is not the only indicator of erosive potential, factors like type of acid, titratable acidity (buffering capacity), Ca\(^{2+}\), PO\(_4^{3-}\) and F\(^-\) concentrations, and chelating properties are all elements for erosive potential (Lussi, 2006b; ten Cate and Imfeld, 1996).

Titratable acidity represents the amount of the actual H\(^+\) concentration available to interact with the dental mineral. The greater titratable acidity is, the harder for saliva to neutralise the pH (Linnett and Seow, 2001; Singh and Jindal, 2010). Different from pH measuring only the dissociated ions in a solution, titratable acidity also measures the erosive potential of bound compounds, giving a more comprehensive view of the potential acidity of a solution (Cairns et al., 2002; Shellis et al., 2014).

After acids dissociate into H\(^+\) and acid anions, the combination of CO\(_3^{2-}\) and PO\(_4^{3-}\) with H\(^+\) in conjunction with the complexation of Ca\(^{2+}\) with anions lead to the softening of an enamel surface (Shellis et al., 2014). The strength of acids is determined by the acid dissociation constant (K\(_a\)), describing how complete the
acids dissociate. Whereas, the strength of anion-calcium interaction is determined by stability constant (K), describing how strong the binding established between anion and calcium (i.e., chelating ability) (Lussi, 2006a; Shellis et al., 2014). Every acid has different strengths of these properties. For acetic acid, it has lower erosive potential than lactic acid, as lactic acid dissociates more readily to release more H⁺, and the lactate-calcium interaction is stronger than acetate-calcium interaction, leading to a stronger chelating effect (Lussi et al., 1993; Shellis et al., 2014).

The other chemical factor associated with erosive potential is the degree of saturation with respect to the enamel mineral. This factor is associated with the concentrations of Ca²⁺, PO₄³⁻ and F⁻ in the solution. For example, soft drinks enriched with calcium and phosphate salts have been shown to have a protective effect against dental erosion on the teeth (Hara and Zero, 2008; Lussi, 2006b).

### 2.3.3 Epidemiology of Dental Erosion

Dental erosion is a common oral disease and a serious public health issue, which is widespread in developed countries such as United Kingdom, Sweden, Canada and the United States (Higham, 2014; Ren, 2011). Several studies have suggested that preschool children between 2 ~ 5 years old had a prevalence of erosion of 6 ~ 50 %, while school-aged children had a prevalence of 20 ~ 100 %, and adults aged between 18 and 88 years had a prevalence of 4 % ~ 82 % (Lussi, 2006b; Higham, 2014). In the UK, 77 % of 20 ~ 25-year-olds have been reported to have erosion (Abou Neel et al., 2016).

It has been reported that both the prevalence and the incidence of dental erosion, especially in adolescents, has increased recently (Donovan, 2011; Gupta et al., 2009; Linnett and Seow, 2001; Shaw and Smith, 1999), which might arise from the increasing consumption of acidic diets such as soft drinks and fruit juices, and the growing number of people suffering from reflux of gastric content (Donovan, 2011; Lussi, 2006a; ten Cate and Imfeld, 1996). In 2010, a Chinese study reported that dental erosion in 12 to 13-year-old school children is
becoming a significant problem, which is in need of an effective solution (Wang et al., 2010).

2.4 Role of Fluoride in Enamel Demineralisation

Fluoride was introduced into dentistry almost 80 years ago and is considered to be the major reason for the drastic decline in the caries prevalence for the past decades (Bratthall et al., 1996; ten Cate, 2013). Multiple fluoride supplements have been used for more than 70 years and can be found in various forms, including drinking water (0.5 ~ 1 ppm), dentifrices (100 ~ 1500 ppm), mouthwashes (250 ~ 500 ppm), and gels and varnishes (> 5000 ppm) (Buzalaf et al., 2011; Hellwig and Lennon, 2004; Li et al., 2014; Mohammed et al., 2014a; ten Cate et al., 2008; Twetman et al., 2003).

The inhibitory mechanism of F⁻ on demineralisation of HAP involves three modes of interactions (Rosin-Grget et al., 2013):

1) Ionic exchange:

\[ \text{Ca}_{10} \text{(PO}_4\text{)}_6 \text{(OH)}_2 + 2\text{F}^- \rightarrow \text{Ca}_{10} \text{(PO}_4\text{)}_6 \text{F}_2 + 2\text{OH}^- \quad (\text{Eq. 2.1}) \]

2) Crystal growth:

\[ 10\text{Ca}^{2+} + 6\text{PO}_4^{3-} + 2\text{F}^- \rightarrow \text{Ca}_{10} \text{(PO}_4\text{)}_6 \text{F}_2 \quad (\text{Eq. 2.2}) \]

3) HAP reaction with F⁻ resulting in CaF₂ formation:

\[ \text{Ca}_{10} \text{(PO}_4\text{)}_6 \text{(OH)}_2 + 20\text{F}^- \rightarrow 10\text{CaF}_2 + 6\text{PO}_4^{3-} + 2\text{OH}^- \quad (\text{Eq. 2.3}) \]

It has been suggested that the Eq. 2.1 and Eq. 2.2 take place following long-term exposure to low concentrations of fluoride solution (0.01 ~ 100 ppm), while crystal growth will occur when the solution is supersaturated with FAP (\(K_{sp} = 10^{-121}\)). Both systemic and topical fluoride sources can lead to these two processes (Cury and
Tenuta, 2009; Rosin-Grget and Lincir, 2001). On the other hand, the formation of CaF$_2$ ($K_{sp} = 3 \times 10^{-10.4}$) (Eq. 2.3) takes place in solution with higher concentrations of fluoride (> 100 ppm at pH 5.0; > 300 ppm at pH 7.2) (McCann, 1968; ten Cate, 1997), which usually results from topical fluoride sources (Mohammed et al., 2013; Rosin-Grget et al., 2013; ten Cate and Featherstone, 1991). At the higher fluoride concentrations, Eq. 2.1 and Eq. 2.2 play minor roles, while Eq. 2.3 accounts for the major reaction (Rosin-Grget et al., 2013; Yamaga et al., 1972). An in vitro study found that, under a pH 4.0 acid challenge, when [F$-$] was below 45 ppm, FAP (or FHA) was predominantly formed in enamel surface, whereas CaF$_2$ was predominantly formed only when the [F$-$] was above 135 ppm (Mohammed et al., 2013).

Both incorporated fluorides (e.g., fluorapatite; FAP and fluorohydroxyapatite; FHA), and deposited fluorides (e.g., CaF$_2$), can contribute to the inhibition of enamel demineralisation (Rosin-Grget et al., 2013; ten Cate, 1997; White and Nancollas, 1990). As F$-$ has a better “fit” into the HAP lattice compared to the larger asymmetric OH$-$, FAP (or FHA) has higher thermal and chemical stability than HAP (Robinson et al., 2004). Therefore, FAP (or FHA) formed in the enamel surface is acid-resistant (Robinson, 2009). As the formation of pure FAP is difficult in a clinical situation, FHA formation is usually more likely (Mei et al., 2018).

On the other hand, CaF$_2$ formed on the enamel surface can inhibit the acid attack as a protective barrier (Magalhaes et al., 2011). The formation of CaF$_2$ requires slight dissolution of the enamel surface in order to provide the necessary Ca$^{2+}$, followed by the reaction with F$-$ (Buzalaf et al., 2011). The CaF$_2$ formed following interaction between fluoride and enamel (mainly HAP) is granular due to the adsorption of HPO$_4^{2-}$ around CaF$_2$ (Barbier et al., 2010; Rolla, 1988). This granular CaF$_2$ is called “CaF$_2$-like globule”, which is less soluble and dissolves more slowly than pure CaF$_2$ during acid attacks (White and Nancollas, 1990). Therefore, CaF$_2$ (or CaF$_2$-like globule) can also act as a pH-driven reservoir of F$-$, which favours the formation of FAP (or FHA) (ten Cate, 2013; Vogel, 2011). It has been proposed that under an acid challenge, F$-$ in enamel fluid, dissolved from CaF$_2$, can be adsorbed onto the enamel surface (Featherstone, 1999). These adsorbed F$-$ attract Ca$^{2+}$ and PO$_4^{3-}$ from oral fluids to form FAP (or FHA), which
protects the mineral of a tooth (Fig. 2.9) (Arends and Christoffersen, 1990; Featherstone, 2008).

**Figure 2.9** – Schematic representation of $F^-$ absorb onto enamel surface, which attract $Ca^{2+}$ and $PO_4^{3-}$, to form an insoluble FAP (or FHA) veneer (From Featherstone, 2008).
Chapter 3 TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH SILVER COMPOUNDS FOR PROTECTION AGAINST ENAMEL DEMINERALISATION

3.1 Use of Silver Compounds in Dentistry

Minimal Intervention Dentistry (MID) has been advocated since the early 1990s, in order to keep the teeth functional for a whole lifetime. In contrast to traditional clinical treatment, the aim of MID is to reduce the need of tissue cutting and save as much healthy tissue as possible by enhancement of cariostatic effect, and by minimally invasive restoration (Frencken et al., 2012; Murdoch-Kinch and McLean, 2003; Wilson, 2007). Even though fluoride has pronounced remineralisation ability and is still the cornerstone of MID for dental caries management (Hellwig and Lennon, 2004), the fluoride concentration in the oral cavity is not enough to inhibit cariogenic bacterial activities (Tenuta and Cury, 2010). Recently, the use of silver compounds for dental caries has been a growing trend in dentistry due to their anti-bacterial properties and non-invasive ways of applications (Horst et al., 2016; Wilson, 2007). Common silver products used in dentistry include silver nitrate (AgNO₃), silver fluoride (AgF) and SDF (Ag[NH₃]₂F) (Peng et al., 2012). Ag[NH₃]₂F has been the most popular silver compound used in the clinical practice lately, whose treatment is effective in arresting and preventing dental caries both in deciduous and permanent dentitions (Peng et al., 2012; Yamaga et al., 1972).

In terms of cariostatic mechanisms of silver compounds, their anti-bacterial mechanisms have been extensively investigated (Lansdown, 2002; Lansdown, 2006; Russell and Hugo, 1994; Thibodeau et al., 1978). However, even though numerous studies have investigated the effects of silver compounds on dental minerals (Green, 1989; Liu et al., 2012b; Lou et al., 2011; Mei et al., 2017; Miller, 1905; Punyanirun et al., 2018), the inhibitory mechanisms of topical treatments with AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F on demineralisation of dental mineral remain obscure.
In clinical practice, treatments with silver compounds are topically applying the silver compounds on the lesions using a micro-brush for a certain application time (Horst et al., 2016). Therefore, to investigate the effects of the topical treatments with silver compounds on demineralisation of dental mineral in vitro, a real-time methodology able to allow “as if clinical” topical treatments with silver compounds on dental mineral, i.e., following a clinical protocol, needs to be developed.

3.2 Topical Treatments with Silver Nitrate for Protection against Enamel Demineralisation

Since the 1840s, silver nitrate (AgNO₃) (pH 4.2) has been used to reduce the prevalence of caries in deciduous dentition (Peng et al., 2012; Lou et al., 2011). Other applications of AgNO₃ include caries prevention in permanent dentition, and as a desensitising agent. In 1917, Howe developed ammoniacal silver nitrate (Ag[NH₃]₂NO₃, so-called Howe’s solution), and this has been subsequently used in caries management (Rosenblatt et al., 2009).

AgNO₃ was one of the first silver compounds topically applied to manage dental caries due to its antibacterial property. It has been concluded that the major antibacterial component of silver compounds was the Ag⁺ (Thibodeau et al., 1978). 10 ~ 40 ppm of Ag⁺ has been shown to be able to destroy most of the pathogens (Lansdown, 2006). Further, it was found that 20 ppm Ag⁺ is lethal to Streptococcus mutans (S.m.) after contact of 3 to 4 h, while 200 ppm Ag⁺ is instantaneously lethal to S.m. (Thibodeau et al., 1978).

Even though the antibacterial property of AgNO₃ is well-understood, its effects on dental mineral are still unclear. The interaction between AgNO₃ and enamel mineral has been suggested to be (Yamaga et al., 1972):

\[
Ca_{10}(PO_4)_6(OH)_2 + 20AgNO_3 \rightarrow 6Ag_3PO_4 + 10Ca(NO_3)_2 + Ag_2O + H_2O \quad (Eq. 3.1)
\]

and shown diagrammatically in Fig 3.1:
As the Ag₃PO₄ (yellow) is insoluble (solubility = 6.5 X 10⁻⁴ g/100 mL) (Lewis, 1920) (Eq 3.1 and Fig. 3.1), it has been proposed that the formation of a “protective barrier” composed of insoluble Ag₃PO₄ following treatment with AgNO₃ can inhibit the demineralisation of dental mineral (Lou et al., 2011; Yamaga et al., 1972). On the other hand, the formation of soluble Ca(NO₃)₂ (solubility = 121.2 g/100 mL) has been proposed to result in the loss of Ca²⁺ from the treated dental mineral (Yamaga et al., 1972).

A study found that following mixing HAP powders with AgNO₃, the colour of the mixture changed from white to yellow immediately due to the formation of yellow Ag₃PO₄ particles (Lou et al., 2011). Gradually, these yellow particles turned black due to the chemical reduction of yellow Ag₃PO₄ to black metallic silver. The formation of black metallic silver is the cause of the black staining of lesions topically treated with silver compounds, which is the major disadvantage of silver compound treatments (Peng et al., 2012). However, even though Ag₃PO₄ was confirmed to be formed in the mixture of HAP powders with AgNO₃, the formation of Ag₃PO₄ following the topical treatment with AgNO₃ on enamel mineral using a micro-brush has not been confirmed. Further, any protective effect of the Ag₃PO₄ has not been investigated.

Other than the previously proposed protective effect from AgNO₃ treatment (Yamaga et al., 1972), a study found that the Ca²⁺ in HAP could be substituted by Ag⁺ after immersion of HAP in AgNO₃ (Ling Feng et al., 1998). Moreover, it has been reported that the solubility of the Ag⁺ substituted HAP disc under pH
4.2 acid attack increased with increasing incorporation of Ag\(^+\) in the HAP (Singh et al., 2011). This indicates that Ag\(^+\) substituted HAP was more susceptible to acid challenge than HAP. Further studies are required to see whether a similar dose-response effect of Ag\(^+\) can also occur, influencing the demineralisation of human enamel.

3.3 Topical Treatments with Silver Fluoride for Protection Against Enamel Demineralisation

Since the 1970s, silver fluoride (AgF) (pH 11.0) has been used to treat dental caries. AgF is a colourless solution comprising silver and fluoride. The applications of AgF can disturb the growth and metabolism of the bacteria in the biofilm (Shah et al., 2014). A series of clinical trials were carried out using 40 wt\% (3.16 M) AgF followed by topical application of 10 wt\% SnF\(_2\) as a reducing agent in an Australian school (Craig et al., 1981; Craig et al., 1987; Green, 1989). It was shown that this combination treatment was more effective than the treatment with 10 wt\% SnF\(_2\) alone, which could arrest proximal and occlusal caries in deciduous dentitions and prevent the development of caries in first permanent molars. It has been suggested that the application of AgF can facilitate the formation of both insoluble Ag\(_3\)PO\(_4\) and CaF\(_2\) (solubility = 0.0015 g/100 mL), and therefore the loss of both PO\(_4^{3-}\) and Ca\(^{2+}\) from enamel mineral can be inhibited (Peng et al., 2012; Yamaga et al., 1972). However, no study has been carried out to confirm this theoretical cariostatic mechanism.

Unfortunately, many studies claiming to examine the effects of AgF, are actually using Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F (Peng et al., 2012; Rosenblatt et al., 2009).
3.4 Topical Treatments with SDF for Protection Against Enamel Demineralisation

As the storage of topical AgF agent for a long period is not easy due to photosensitivity of Ag⁺ (Liu et al., 2012c; Zhao et al., 2017a), Ag[NH₃]₂F (Silver Diammine Fluoride, SDF) was developed. The ammonia in SDF helps to stabilise Ag⁺ in the solution by forming a silverdiammine complex, [Ag(NH₃)₂]⁺, through reversible reaction (Liu et al., 2012b). Ag[NH₃]₂F is also a colourless solution comprising silver and fluoride but less alkaline (pH ~ 10.0) (Mei et al., 2013a).

Since the 1970s, Ag[NH₃]₂F has been accepted as a therapeutic agent for anticaries function by the central Pharmaceutical Council of the Ministry of Health and Welfare in Japan (Yamaga et al., 1972). However, the applications of Ag[NH₃]₂F are not common in western countries (Gao et al., 2016). Recently, Ag[NH₃]₂F has drawn attention from dental researchers due to its profound effectiveness in preventing and arresting dental caries, and its non-invasive method of application (Frencken et al., 2012; Mei et al., 2017). In 2015, Ag[NH₃]₂F entered the US market shortly after being approved for clinical use by United State Food and Drug Administration (FDA) in 2014 (Horst et al., 2016). In 2016, a Current Dental Terminology (CDT) code was approved for Ag[NH₃]₂F to be used in arresting dental caries (Horst et al., 2016).

Ag[NH₃]₂F has been regarded as an efficient, affordable, effective and safe therapeutic agent across ages, whose application for caries control conforms to the World Health Organization’s Millennium Goals, and the US Institute of Medicine’s criteria for 21st Century medical care (Horst et al., 2016). Further, the low cost and the simplicity of Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment on dental caries make it appropriate to be used in children from low-income families living in underprivileged and remote areas (Chu and Lo, 2008b; Contreras et al., 2017; Fung et al., 2013). In terms of caries in permanent teeth of adults, Ag[NH₃]₂F can also be used for patients who cannot tolerate conventional treatments, or for patients with extreme risks of caries such as salivary dysfunction (Horst et al., 2016).
It has been proposed that the use of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F is more effective in controlling carious lesions than other minimally invasive topical treatments such as fluoride varnish (Crystal and Niederman, 2016). However, similar to other silver compound treatments, the major disadvantage of topical treatment with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F is the black staining of the treated lesion (Fig. 3.2) (Horst et al., 2016; Mei et al., 2016). A new Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F product, which is claimed to be able to treat lesions without the black staining has been issued by Riva Star (SDI Ltd, Australia). The product comprises a silver capsule containing 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, and a green capsule containing saturated solution of potassium iodine (SSKI). The concept is that the application of SSKI following treatment with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F will remove excessive Ag$^+$ by forming white AgI, thereby eliminating the possibility of black staining (Ngo et al., 2002).

Figure 3.2 – Black staining of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treated teeth (From Mei et al., 2016).

3.4.1. Clinical Effects of Topical Treatments with SDF on Enamel Caries

Many Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F studies have been carried out to investigate its effectiveness in clinical practice (Contreras et al., 2017). These studies cover a wide range from coronal caries in primary teeth and permanent teeth, to root caries (Appendix A). In this section, clinical studies of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatments on coronal caries are discussed.
Amongst all the different concentrations of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F available, including 12 wt% (0.75 M), 38 wt% (2.36 M) and 50.9 wt% (3.16 M) Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Fung et al., 2013; SDI, 2016a), 38 wt% is the most commonly used (Horst et al., 2016). An annual application of 38 wt% Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F has been reported to be able to prevent pit and fissure caries in permanent 1$^{st}$ molars (Liu et al., 2012a). Further, Llodra et al. found that a biannual 38 wt% Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F application could reduce and prevent caries in both deciduous teeth and permanent 1$^{st}$ molars (Llodra et al., 2005). Recently, a randomised controlled trial (RCT) concluded that the topical application of 38 wt% Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F is effective and safe in arresting cavities in preschool children (Milgrom et al., 2018). Chu et al. reported a case about application of 38 wt% Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on rampant caries in permanent dentition (Chu et al., 2014); A 14-year-old boy with chronic oral graft versus host disease (GVHD) was in need of treatment of multiple cavitated caries. After topical application of 38 wt% Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F followed by restoration with temporary dental material, the prognosis was good without any pain perceived.

However, despite the fact that there are multiple concentrations of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F products on the market, the does-response effects of these products have not been investigated. Further, even though the compositions of all the commercial Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F products were provided in their safety data sheets (SDS), the manufacture processes of the products are market secrets. Therefore, studies can be done to compare the effects of the topical treatments with these products with the effects of the same concentration of laboratory-prepared Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on the demineralisation of dental mineral.

### 3.4.2 Establishment of Standard Protocol for Topical Treatment with SDF

Several studies have shown that Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F is more effective in caries arrest at 38 wt% (2.36 M) than 12 wt% (0.75 M) (Fung et al., 2016; Fung et al., 2018). Furthermore, randomised controlled trials (RCTs) have found that biannual application of 38 wt% Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F application is more effective than annual and consecutive three weekly Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F applications in caries arrest (Duangthip et
Therefore, based on the current evidence (Duangthip et al., 2017; Fung et al., 2016; Fung et al., 2018), the biannual application of 38 wt% Ag[NH₃]₂F is the most effective protocol.

For Ag[NH₃]₂F application, application times from 10 sec to 3 min have been used in most of the clinical studies. In 2016, University of California San Francisco (UCSF) proposed that the application time of Ag[NH₃]₂F should be more than 1 min for the optimal effectiveness (Horst et al., 2016). They also recommended that Ag[NH₃]₂F treated lesion should be rinsed. However, concerns have been expressed about losing effectiveness by rinsing (Horst, 2018). Another review suggested that a 30 ~ 60 sec Ag[NH₃]₂F application followed by air-drying provides the best results for caries arrest (Crystal and Niederman, 2016). Lately, in 2017, American Academy of Paediatric Dentistry (AAPD) announced a guideline of using 1 min 38 wt% Ag[NH₃]₂F application followed by gentle air-drying in arresting carious primary teeth. Further, they expected similar cariostatic effectiveness of Ag[NH₃]₂F could be exerted on carious permanent teeth through the same protocol (Crystal et al., 2017). Therefore, 1 min application followed by air-drying should be the best procedure for Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment.

### 3.4.3 Cariostatic Mechanisms of SDF

Even though several possible cariostatic mechanisms of Ag[NH₃]₂F have been suggested (Mei et al., 2018; Zhao et al., 2017a), to date, its cariostatic mechanism is still unclear (Mei et al., 2017). It has been proposed that as fluoride in Ag[NH₃]₂F inhibits mineral loss, and silver in Ag[NH₃]₂F inhibits activities of cariogenic bacteria, the development of dental caries can be arrested (Rosenblatt et al., 2009). Actions of Ag[NH₃]₂F on dental mineral, cariogenic bacteria and dentinal organic content (Appendix A) have all been studied, and the action of Ag[NH₃]₂F on enamel mineral is discussed in this section.

The interaction between Ag[NH₃]₂F and enamel mineral has been suggested to be (Yamaga et al., 1972):
and shown diagrammatically in Fig 3.3:

**Figure 3.3** – Reaction between Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and HAP. The Ca$^{2+}$ and PO$_4^{3-}$ released from demineralising enamel can be preserved by the formation of CaF$_2$ and Ag$_3$PO$_4$, respectively (Adapted from Yamaga et al., 1972).

As both insoluble CaF$_2$ (solubility = $1.6 \times 10^{-3}$ g/100 mL) and Ag$_3$PO$_4$ (solubility = $6.5 \times 10^{-4}$ g/100 mL) are formed following Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F application (Eq. 3.2), it has been proposed that both Ca$^{2+}$ and PO$_4^{3-}$ released from dental mineral, can be preserved by the formation of a protective barrier composed of insoluble CaF$_2$ and Ag$_3$PO$_4$ (Fig. 3.3). Furthermore, the formed CaF$_2$ has been proposed to act as a reservoir of F$^-$ for the formation of acid-resistant FAP (or FHA) (Yamaga et al., 1972).

It has been reported that CaF$_2$ and Ag$_3$PO$_4$ were formed in enamel powders mixed with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Zhao et al., 2017a). Further, an study found that the mineral density of incipient enamel caries in permanent premolars treated with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F was increased (Punyanirun et al., 2018). These findings suggest the ability of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F application in preserving both Ca$^{2+}$ and PO$_4^{3-}$ of the treated dental mineral. However, it has been proposed that Ag$_3$PO$_4$ can be dissolved in ammonium (Firsching, 1961), which may affect the Ag$_3$PO$_4$ formation following Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatment. Further, a study reported that following mixing HAP powders with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, metallic silver rather than Ag$_3$PO$_4$ was found, and the CaF$_2$-like globules disappeared after rinsing with water (Lou et al., 2011). Therefore, the formation of Ag$_3$PO$_4$ and the cariostatic efficacy of the formed CaF$_2$ are questionable.
Recently, an in vitro study was carried out using calcium phosphate (Ca$_3$(PO$_4$)$_2$) incubated with low concentrations of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (2.36 X 10$^{-3}$ ~ 2.36 X 10$^{-2}$ M), taking into account the salivary dilution after application (Mei et al., 2017). After incubation at 37 °C for 24 h, fluorohydroxyapatite (FHA, a partially fluoride-substituted HAP) was found using X-ray diffraction (XRD). As a result, they proposed that acid-resistant FHA formation should be a more reasonable explanation for the cariostatic efficacy of treatment with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Mei et al., 2017).

However, Ca$_3$(PO$_4$)$_2$ is stoichiometrically different from HAP and enamel mineral, and XRD is not a suitable technique to differentiate FHA from HAP due to the crystallographic similarity between these two compounds. Therefore, further studies are required to confirm the formation of FHA following topical treatment with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on enamel mineral. $^{19}$F MAS-NMR is one of the few techniques capable of differentiating FHA from HAP, which can be used to identify FHA following Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatment on dental mineral (Elsharkawy et al., 2018; Mohammed et al., 2013; White et al., 1994).
Chapter 4 AIMS AND OBJECTIVES

4.1 Aims

1. To develop a real-time methodology to investigate the effects of topical treatments with silver compounds on dental mineral.

2. To investigate the dose-response effects of Ag⁺ in solution on demineralisation of human enamel.

3. To understand the inhibitory mechanisms of topical treatments with silver compounds, including silver nitrate (AgNO₃), silver fluoride (AgF) and SDF (Ag[NH₃]₂F), on demineralisation of hydroxyapatite (HAP) discs and human enamel.

4. To investigate the dose-response effects of topical treatments with AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F on demineralisation of human enamel.

5. To compare the inhibitory efficacy and effects of topical treatment with a commercial Ag[NH₃]₂F product with laboratory-prepared Ag[NH₃]₂F on demineralisation of HAP discs and human enamel.

4.2 Objectives

1. Real-time Ca²⁺ ion selective electrodes (ISEs) will be used to monitor calcium loss of hydroxyapatite (HAP) discs before and after treatments with increasing F⁻ and Zn²⁺ concentrations in order to validate the technique by comparison with the previously reported dose-response studies of demineralisation inhibition using Scanning Microradiography (SMR) (Chapter 6).

2. Real-time scanning microradiograph (SMR) will be used to monitor mineral loss of human enamel under acid challenge in a demineralisation solution containing an increasing concentration of Ag⁺ (Chapter 7).
3. Ca\(^{2+}\), Ag\(^{+}\) and F\(^{-}\) ISEs, scanning electron microscopy (SEM), energy dispersive X-ray analysis (EDX) and \(^{31}\)P and \(^{19}\)F MAS-NMR will be used to investigate the effects of topical treatments with 3.16 M AgNO\(_3\), 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F on the demineralisation of HAP discs and human enamel (Chapter 8 and 10). Also, a Knoop micro-hardness tester will be used to investigate the effects of topical treatments with 3.16 M AgNO\(_3\), 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F on demineralisation of human enamel (Chapter 10).

4. Ca\(^{2+}\), Ag\(^{+}\) and F\(^{-}\) ISEs, SEM, EDX, \(^{31}\)P and \(^{19}\)F MAS-NMR and Knoop micro-hardness tester will be used to investigate the effects of topical treatments with 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M of AgNO\(_3\), AgF and Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F on the demineralisation of human enamel (Chapter 10).

5. Ca\(^{2+}\), Ag\(^{+}\) and F\(^{-}\) ISEs, SEM, EDX and \(^{31}\)P and \(^{19}\)F MAS-NMR will be used to investigate the effects of topical treatment with Silver Capsule of Riva Star (SDI Ltd, Australia) on the demineralisation of HAP discs and human enamel (Chapter 8). Also, a Knoop micro-hardness tester will be used to investigate the effects of topical treatment with Silver Capsule of Riva Star on demineralisation of human enamel (Chapter 10).
PART II: INTRODUCTION OF TECHNIQUES USED IN THIS STUDY
Chapter 5 TECHNIQUES USED IN THIS STUDY

5.1 Scanning Microradiography

Scanning microradiography (SMR) is an X-ray attenuation technique, which can monitor the mineral mass of the specimen in real-time (Anderson and Elliott, 1993; Elliott et al., 1994). During the experiment, the specimen is contained in a SMR cell, which is mounted on the SMR stage. Next, the intensity of a 15 μm X-ray beam attenuated by passing through the specimen, is continually measured. The attenuated X-ray intensity is detected, and therefore the mineral mass of the specimen can be calculated by the computer system (Eq. 5.1) (Anderson and Elliott, 1993). The SMR cell allows the creation of strictly controlled condition for specific study. For example, by circulating acid through the SMR cell containing enamel or HAP sections (Fig. 5.1), many different demineralisation studies have been carried out (e.g., Anderson et al., 1998; Anderson et al., 2004a; Kosoric et al., 2010; Mohammed et al., 2014a; Mohammed et al., 2015).

\[ I = I_0 \times e^{-\mu_mM} \]  \hspace{1cm} (Eq. 5.1)

\( I \) = transmitted X-ray intensity

\( I_0 \) = incident X-ray intensity

\( \mu_m \) = mass absorption coefficient

\( M \) = mass per unit area of the specimen (g/cm\(^2\))
The SMR apparatus includes SMR cells, SMR stages, an X-ray generator, an X-ray detector and a computer (Anderson and Elliott, 1993). SMR cells are transparent boxes (4 cm X 5 cm X 6 mm) made of polymethyl methacrylate (Fig. 5.1). In the centre of each SMR cell, there is a circular chamber, which contains the specimen. The SMR cell is mounted on the SMR stage with screws. The SMR apparatus has X and Y stages which allow the cell to move up to 600 mm horizontally in X-axis and up to 200 mm vertically in Y-axis. The X-ray generator includes a PANalytical® X-ray tube to produce a stable 15 μm X-ray beam using a 15 μm aperture made up of 90 % gold and 10 % platinum. The attenuated X-ray beam after passing through the specimen is then detected by the X-ray detector coupled with a digital spectrometer. Subsequently, the received signal is processed with a digital converter into a sequence of digital values, and the mineral mass of the tested specimen can be obtained (Fig. 5.2) (Anderson and Elliott, 1993).
5.2 Ion Selective Electrode

An ion selective electrode (ISE) is a potentiometric sensor used as an analytic tool for the concentration (or activity) measurement of a selected free ion in solution (Rundle, 2000). The scientific applications of ISEs are diverse, including pollution monitoring, analysis of agriculture composition, measurement of salt contents in meat, examination of fluoridation of water, detection of corrosive effects in canned foods, determining the constituents of dairy products or preservatives, and laboratory research (Frant, 1994; Oesch et al., 1986). In dentistry, ISEs have been used for the measurement of Ca\(^{2+}\) activity in oral fluids to evaluate the Ca\(^{2+}\) concentrations in saliva, dental plaque and plaque fluid (Carey and Vogel, 2000). F\(^{-}\) ISEs have been used for the detection of F\(^{-}\) concentration in mineral and drinking water, mouthwashes, toothpastes, tea, food, and urine, in order to measure the F\(^{-}\) concentrations, which is useful to prevent fluorosis development in humans (Adejumo et al., 2009; Bratovcic and Odobasic, 2011; Frant and Ross, 1968; Itota et al., 2004; Kiliçel and Dağ, 2014; Malde et al., 2001; Ruiz-Payana et al., 2005; Villa et al., 2010).

In this study, Ag\(^{+}\) ISEs were used to monitor the concentration of Ag\(^{+}\) in the solution. Ag\(^{+}\) ISEs have not previously been used in dental research.
ISEs can deliver real-time information about the concentration variation of specific ions in complex samples by automatically measuring electronic voltages between two electrodes continuously. The relationship between ion concentration and the voltage reading is defined by the “Nernst equation” which states that this voltage is proportional to the logarithm of the concentration (or activity) (Eq 5.2) (Covington and Kenneth, 1979). Therefore, the ISE readings recorded can be converted into concentration units (Fig 5.3).

\[
E = E^0 + \left( \frac{2.303RT}{nF} \right) \times \log(A)
\]  
(Eq 5.2)

- **E** = total potential in mV
- **E^0** = constant of a given ISE/reference pair
- **2.303** = conversion factor
- **R** = gas constant (8.314 joules/degree/mole)
- **T** = absolute temperature (Kelvin)
- **n** = the ionic charge
- **F** = Faraday constant (96500 coulombs)
- **A** = activity (effective ions) of the measured ion

Slope = 2.303RT/nF (e.g., at 25 °C; Slope of Ca^{2+} ≈ 29.5 mV/dec, Ag^{+} ≈ 59.1 mV/dec, F^{-} ≈ -59.1 mV/dec)

![Figure 5.3 - An ISE calibration curve (From Wroblewski, 2005).](image-url)
Overall, there are four types of conventional sensing ISEs including glass body electrode, solid state (crystalline membrane), liquid ion exchange (polymer membrane) and gas sensing type (Chen et al., 2011; Lakshminarayanaiah, 2012; Buhlmann and Chen, 2012; Srinivasan and Rechnitz, 1969; Yim et al., 1993). The basic ISE system comprises an indicator electrode, a reference electrode and a voltmeter (Rundle, 2000). The crucial part of the system required for the selectivity of the specific ion is the membrane of the indicator electrode which only allows that one specific ion to pass through (Wilson and Walker, 2000).

In a potentiometric electrochemical cell, one half-cell provides a known reference potential and the potential of the other half-cell indicates the target ion concentration in the solution (Fig. 5.4) (Harvey, 2016). Since the potential of the reference electrode is constant, it is the indicator electrode which possesses the analytical information. Therefore, by measuring the disparity of the indicator and reference electrode potentials the concentration (M) of the target ion in the solution can be measured (Rundle, 2000).

Figure 5.4 - Schematic representation of an ISE system (From Harvey, 2016).
5.2.1 Ion Activity and Ion Concentration: Two Different Measures

The measurement of the ISE relies on the equilibrium of the concentrations of ions permitted across an ion-selective ISE membrane, and is directly associated with the total number of ions in dilute solution. However, in a solution with high concentrations of ions (both positively- and negatively-charged), the mobility of individual ions is reduced due to inter-ionic interactions. This leads to lower measured ISE readings (in mV), resulting in a lowered measurement of the target ion concentration (Rundle, 2000). The effective concentration measured by ISEs is the “activity” of the ion. Consequently, the calibration curve (Fig. 5.3) at higher concentrations curves away from linearity due to the disparity between the measured activity and the actual concentration. Therefore, it is more correct to state that the measured voltage is proportional to the logarithm of the activity of the target ion. The activity coefficient is the ratio of the ion activity divided by the ion concentration. This decreases with increasing ion concentration, and is determined by the total effect of all the ions in the solution (Ionic Strength, IS), calculated using Eq 5.3 (Rundle, 2000).

\[
 IS = 0.5 \times \sum c_i z_i^2 
\]  
(Eq 5.3)

\( c_i = \) concentration in Moles

\( z_i = \) valence

5.2.2 Advantages of ISEs

The use of ISE systems has several advantages. First, the apparatus is relatively inexpensive and simple to use compared to other analytic techniques. Secondly, the electrodes are robust which are suitable to use in nature or laboratory. In addition, the operation and reading of an ISE system is independent of the colour or turbidity of the test solution. Moreover, ISEs are able to measure both cations and anions (even though not all ions are measurable). Normally, the precision
level is of the order of ± 2 or 3 % (Rundle, 2000). Continuous monitoring of the concentration variation in real-time is also possible. Many studies can only observe the sample before and after the intervention, whereas, real-time monitoring of the ion concentration is not interrupted by the topical treatments of the specimen, which is the most important feature of the ISE system with regard to this project.

5.2.3 Limitations of ISEs

1. ISEs can only detect dissolved ions in aqueous solutions, so insoluble compounds cannot be analysed using ISEs (Christian, 2004).

2. The membranes may not be so specific to the target ion and may be slightly permeable to other ions existing in the test solution. There is no ideal membrane with the complete selective ability to rule out other ions’ interference, and the capacity depends on the selectivity coefficient (k) (Wroblewski, 2005).

3. Operating ISEs above the higher limit of detection or below the lower limit of detection, i.e., out of the linearity range, will have the potential for error (Skoog et al., 1996). Generally, the range for linear (Nernstian) calibration curve is within 0.1 ~ 10^{-5} M (Rundle, 2000).

4. ISEs have a temperature range. Crystal-membrane types can be used in the range of 0 °C to 80 °C, whilst the range of PVC-membrane types is from 0 °C to 50 °C (Rundle, 2000). Outside of these ranges, the membranes might be damaged resulting in errors of readings.

5.2.4 The Effect of Temperature

As temperature is one of the factors in the Nernst equation, it can affect ISE readings recorded during the study (Koryta and Štulík, 1983). The increase in temperature leads to a decrease in ISE reading. From the slope of the Nernst equation, it can be seen that the higher the temperature, the steeper the tendency
of the calibration line (Fig 5.5). Therefore, experiments should be conducted at the same temperature as that is used in the calibration (all-about-pH.com, 2017). According to the Nernst equation (Eq. 5.2), the change in the slope per degree is about 0.2 mV/dec.

![Figure 5.5 - Temperature effects on the slope of the calibration curve of a single charged ion (Adapted from all-about-pH.com, 2017).](image)

5.3 Effect of Data Sampling Frequency on Calculated Error in Gradient

In the SMR results, the projected mineral mass of the specimen is plotted against the time period of the study. In the ISE results, the calcium loss of the specimen is plotted against over a time period of the ISE study. Subsequently, the trend of the change in the mineral mass or in the calcium loss can be illustrated by a trendline of these data. The more points in the data plot, the more accurate the trendline gradient will be to represent the change.

For example, Fig. 5.6a ~ c shows the change in the projected HAP disc mineral mass content in acetic acid over 24 h with 100 %, 50 % and 10 % of sampling data (Lingawi, 2012). The standard error of the trendline increases as the number of points decreases. Further, the percentage increase in the standard error is equal to the square root of the percentage decrease in the data point number. For instance, the standard error of the 100 % sampling frequency (= 0.07 X 10^{-4}) increases by the square root of 2 (= 100 % divided by 50 %) to the standard error of the 50 % sampling frequency (= 0.10 X 10^{-4}). Therefore, as real-time SMR
monitoring collects numerous data points, the gradient of change in the mineral mass of the specimen can be calculated with a low error value using SigmaPlot 10.0 (Systat Software, California, USA). This applies equally to ISE data collecting constant direction of change.

Fig. 5.7a shows the ISE measured calcium loss from an HAP disc in pH 4.0 acetic acid, and Fig. 5.7b shows the calcium loss from the same HAP disc which is topically treated and re-immersed back into acetic acid. The gradients of the changes in the calcium loss before and after treatment are similar. However, the difference between the two calcium loss ISE data are still significant due to the numerous data points collected (Fig. 5.7c).

For both SMR and ISE data, the error is improved by a factor of $\sqrt{N}$, when N is the number of measurements.
Figure 5.6 - Change in the projected HAP disc mineral mass content in pH 4.0 acetic acid over 24 h with (a) 100 %, (b) 50 %) and (c) 10 % sampling frequency of data. Blue dots: one StdErr away from trendline; Green dots: two StdErr away from trendline; Yellow dots: three StdErr away from trendline (From Lingawi, 2012).
Figure 5.7 – Change in the calcium loss from an HAP disc in pH 4.0 acetic acid (a) before (Blue dots) and (b) after (Red dots) topical treatment. The difference between the gradient of the two calcium loss trendlines (0.32 X 10^{-3}) is detected (Green dots).
5.4 Scanning Electron Microscopy

Scanning electron microscopy (SEM) is a non-destructive technique used to obtain a magnified image through interactions between thermo-ionically emitted electrons (electron beam) and the assessed sample surface (Vernon-Parry, 2000). Before being inspected by SEM, non-conductive samples must be coated with an electrically conductive thin film (either gold or carbon in the order of 20 nm thickness) to enable their imaging (Nixon, 1969).

After electrons are emitted from the electron gun with significant amounts of kinetic energy, several electromagnetic condenser lenses focus the electron beam into a fine probe. Next, this energy is dissipated as a variety of signals produced by electron-sample interactions when the incident electrons are decelerated in the solid sample (Schweitzer, 2014; Swepp, 2017; Vernon-Parry, 2000). The interactions between electrons and samples in a variety of ways, which produce secondary electrons (that produce SEM images) and characteristic X-rays (that are used for elemental analysis like energy-dispersive X-ray analysis, EDX) (Vernon-Parry, 2000). Production of secondary and low energy electrons are the main interactions for generation of topographic information as they can only escape from a very shallow, near-surface layer of the sample, and provide the highest spatial resolution (Vernon-Parry, 2000) (Fig. 5.8).
5.5 Energy-Dispersive X-ray Analysis

Energy Dispersive X-ray analysis (EDX) is a technique used for elemental analysis. As a focused beam of electrons bombards the sample to excite an electron in an inner shell, ejecting it from the shell, an electron from an outer, higher-energy shell then fills the electron-hole of the inner, lower-energy shell, and the emitted characteristic X-ray can be detected (Fig 5.9). As the magnitude of the signal is proportional to the energy of the X-ray, EDX spectrum can be illustrated as X-ray counts versus energy. That provides a means of rapidly evaluating the elemental constituents of a specimen and gives accurate quantitative analysis. Qualitative analysis involves the identification of the peaks in the spectrum to determine the elements present in the excited volume of the sample. Quantitative analysis (determination of the concentrations of the elements present) entails measuring line intensities for each element in the sample (ACMAL, 2014; Peter, 2005; Middleton, 1999).
5.6 Magic Angle Spinning – Nuclear Magnetic Resonance

Nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR) is a non-destructive characteristic tool which can be used to determine the physical and chemical properties of atoms or molecules. Information including structure, reaction state and environment of the molecules can be obtained by interpreting the NMR spectrograms (Iggo, 2011).

Figure 5.9 - Schematic representation of EDX (From ACMAL, 2014).

Figure 5.10 - Schematic representation of NMR apparatus (From Robert, 1959).
The apparatus comprises a magnet, a radio-frequency oscillator and a receiver (Fig 5.10). Under the particular magnetic field (B₀), which defines the resonance frequency (or Larmor frequency; ν), the sample put in the magnet pole gap can absorb certain energy (ΔE). After the “relaxation”, energy is emitted at a certain radio-frequency which can be detected and recorded by the receiver (Robert, 1959). The resonance frequency (ν) is characteristic of a given nucleus of the inspected sample, which is affected by its chemical environment, called chemical shielding. Chemical shielding is associated with the interaction of the electrons surrounding the nucleus with the applied magnetic field (B₀), whose magnitude can be measured as the “chemical shift (δ)” of the resonance line from that of a reference compound (Eq. 5.4) (Iggo, 2011). The characterisation of the sample is then achieved by measuring the positions of peaks of chemical shifts observed in NMR spectra, as they represent specific forms or states of the target nuclei (Robert, 1959). In contrast to aqueous phase NMR, solid-state NMR spectroscopy is affected by local nuclear interactions which result in broad spectra masking the chemical shift peaks. To overcome this problem in solid-state NMR, the sample is spun at high speed at a magic angle (54.74°) with respect to the magnet field in solid-state NMR. This is magic angle spinning (MAS), which averages the interactions, and consequently the peaks become narrower, and distinguishable spectra with better resolution are produced (Alia et al., 2009; Iggo, 2011).

\[ \delta = \frac{\nu_{\text{observed}} - \nu_{\text{reference}}}{\nu_{\text{reference}}} \]  

(Eq. 5.4)

However, not all nuclei are magnetically active. Only nuclei with odd numbers of protons and/or neutrons such as ³¹P and ¹⁹F can be applied in NMR characterisation (Iggo, 2011; Shoolery, 1954). Both ³¹P and ¹⁹F MAS-NMR have been used in dental research for decades. ³¹P MAS-NMR can identify numerous apatite species (Tsai and Chan, 2011), and ¹⁹F MAS-NMR is capable of differentiating FAP and FHA from HAP, and can distinguish between FAP, FHA and CaF₂ (Elsharkawy et al., 2018; Mohammed et al., 2013; White et al., 1994).
Sometimes chemical shift peaks overlap with each other, which leads to a combined asymmetric peak. In this case, deconvolution of the spectrum, e.g., using DmFit (France), is required to identify each compound contributing to the peak (Fig. 5.11) (Gerth et al., 2007).

**Figure 5.11** – Deconvolution of a $^{19}$F MAS-NMR spectra of HAP, and of human enamel powders treated with amine fluoride (From Gerth et al., 2007).

### 5.7 Knoop Micro-hardness Test

#### 5.7.1 Microscopic Photographs

The microscope of the Knoop micro-hardness tester can be used to monitor the morphology of lesion sections. By attaching a camera to the microscope (Fig. 5.12), these microscopic photographs of the lesion sections (Fig. 5.13) can be obtained.
Figure 5.12 – Taking the microscopic photographs through the microscope of the Knoop micro-hardness tester using a camera.

Figure 5.13 – Typical microscopic photographs of a tooth with Knoop indentations on a dentine specimen (From Chu and Lo, 2008a).

5.7.2 Knoop Micro-hardness Indentation

Micro-hardness testing refers to static indentations made with loads not exceeding 1 kgf. The indenter of the Knoop micro-hardness tester is a rhombic-
based pyramidal-shaped diamond with edge angles of 172° 30' and 130° 0' (Fig 5.14) (Davidson et al., 1974; England, 2013). The hardness assessment is conducted by forcing the indenter into the surface of the sample with a test force of between 1 gf and 1 kgf and then to measure the length of the indentation diagonal with a light microscope. Calculation of the Knoop hardness (KHN) is carried out via Eq 5.5 (ASTM, 2012; England, 2013).

![Knoop Hardness Indenter Indentation](image)

**Figure 5.14 – Diagrams of the Knoop indenter (From England, 2013).**

\[
\text{KHN} = \frac{F}{A} = \frac{F}{CL^2} \tag{Eq 5.5}
\]

F = applied load in kgf

A = the unrecovered projected area of the indentation (mm²)

L = measured the length of the long diagonal of indentation (mm)

C = 0.07028 = Constant of indenter relating projected area of the indentation to the square of the length of the long diagonal.
PART III: DEVELOPMENT OF AN ISE METHODOLOGY TO INVESTIGATE THE EFFECTS OF TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION
Chapter 6 VALIDATION OF A REAL-TIME ISE METHODOLOGY TO QUANTIFY THE INFLUENCE OF INHIBITORS OF DEMINERALISATION KINETICS IN VITRO USING A HYDROXYAPATITE MODEL SYSTEM

6.1 Introduction

Numerous techniques have been used to investigate caries progression, such as profilometry, scanning electron microscopy, microradiography and microindentation (Arends et al., 1987; Shellis et al., 2010). However, in addition to these static methodologies, real-time techniques have also been developed to monitor the dissolution process by periodic measurements of tissue loss or inspection of surface morphology (Shellis et al., 2010).

For example, scanning micro-radiography (SMR) allows continuous observation of demineralisation in vitro and has been used in several dental researches (e.g., Kosoric et al., 2010; Mohammed et al., 2015; Shah et al., 2011). However, SMR is very technique sensitive and requires extensive protocols to ensure accurate measurement. As silver compounds are reduced to metallic silver over time due to the photosensitivity of Ag⁺ (Lin et al., 2015), the effect of topical treatments with silver compounds may be affected by application time. Therefore, the real-time SMR technique could not be applied in this study, as it requires time-consuming sample preparations following the topical treatments of the specimens. Thus, a novel real-time methodology allowing efficient topical treatment of the specimen was needed to investigate the effects of topical treatments with silver compounds on demineralisation.

Ion selective electrodes (ISEs) are potentiometric sensors which can be used as analytic tools for measuring the effective concentration of selected ions in a solution and have been used in the dental area for many years (Bjorvatn and Morch, 1979; Covington and Kenneth, 1979). As dental caries and dental erosion are associated with Ca²⁺ loss from dental hard tissues
(Abou Neel et al., 2016), the Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release from dental mineral can be regarded as a proxy for demineralisation. Therefore, the use of real-time Ca\textsuperscript{2+} ISE has the potential for demineralisation studies. Furthermore, real-time Ca\textsuperscript{2+} ISE study allows topical treatments of specimens during the experiment in an efficient way, which is required for the investigation of the effects of topical treatments with silver compounds on demineralisation. However, even though real-time ISEs have been used in many research areas other than dentistry (Chumbimuni-Torres et al., 2009; Kim et al., 2005; Zeitchek and Anthony, 2013), cariostatic demineralisation studies using real-time Ca\textsuperscript{2+} ISE have not been reported.

The inhibitory effects of F\textsuperscript{-} and of Zn\textsuperscript{2+} on enamel demineralisation in vitro have been studied previously using SMR (Mohammed et al., 2014a; Mohammed et al., 2015). The results showed a log-linear relationship between mean percentage reduction in the rate of enamel mineral loss (PRML\textsubscript{enamel}) with increasing F\textsuperscript{-} concentration, and with increasing Zn\textsuperscript{2+} concentration. If similar results of the SMR studies can be replicated using real-time ISE, the technique can be validated to be used for quantifying the influence of inhibitors of demineralisation kinetics in vitro.
6.2 Aim

The aim was to validate the use of Ca$^{2+}$ ISEs for real-time monitoring of calcium loss of hydroxyapatite (HAP) discs by replicating the previous SMR studies exactly but using Ca$^{2+}$ ISE. HAP discs were used in the present corroboration study to avoid the interference from inhomogeneities in human enamel such as individual variations in composition and biological structures (Section 1.2.1 and Section 1.2.2).
6.3 Materials and Methods

6.3.1 Preparation of Samples

Forty-eight porous HAP circular discs (20% porosity, 12 mm in diameter, 2 mm in thickness; Plasma Biotal Ltd, UK) were varnished with red nail lacquer (KIKO, Italy) to expose only the upper face to the demineralisation solution (Fig 6.1). The varnished discs were then allocated into sixteen groups (n = 3 each) of increasing [Zn^{2+}] or increasing [F^-] as previously described (Mohammed et al., 2014a; Mohammed et al., 2015).

6.3.2 Preparation of Demineralisation Solution

A 0.1 M CH3COOH (Sigma-Aldrich, UK) demineralisation solution buffered by adding 1.0 M KOH (Sigma-Aldrich, UK) drop by drop up to pH 4.0 was prepared, as used previously (Mohammed et al., 2014a; Mohammed et al., 2015).
6.3.3 ISE Calibration

A Ca$^{2+}$ ISE paired with a double-junction lithium acetate reference electrode (ELIT 003n), was connected to an 8 channel ion analyser (attached to a computer) to record the mV output at specified time intervals. All ISE equipment used were products of Nico2000 (Nico2000 Ltd, UK).

ISEs are pH sensitive, so the ISE calibration solution was prepared with the demineralisation solution in the same pH as used in the main study. A 1 mM Ca$^{2+}$ standard solution was made by adding 0.147 g CaCl$_2$ · 2H$_2$O into the demineralisation solution and made up to 1 L. The Ca$^{2+}$ ISE was immersed in 50 mL of demineralisation solution, and standard calcium solution was added drop-wise to gradually increase the [Ca$^{2+}$] up to about 0.5 mM. The calibration was performed at 23.0±1.0 °C using a temperature stabilised stirrer (Stuart UC152D/KIT, UK). Subsequently, the activity coefficients for each [Ca$^{2+}$] were calculated with an ionic speciation program, Chemist (MicroMath, Missouri, USA). Next, the calibration curve was obtained by plotting the logarithm of calcium activity (mM) against ISE readings in mV.

6.3.4 Demineralisation Study

Each varnished HAP disc was immersed into 50 mL demineralisation solution (23.0±1.0 °C) for 1 h. The solution was continuously stirred using a magnetic stirrer (Stuart UC152D/KIT, UK). The Ca$^{2+}$ ISE was used to monitor the increase in Ca$^{2+}$ activity as demineralisation progressed, at intervals of 1 min (Fig 6.2).
Then, 1 mL zinc acetate or sodium fluoride were added to the solutions to obtain concentrations of 0.1, 0.4, 1.8, 9.0, 36.0, 107.0, 356.0 or 1782.0 ppm Zn$^{2+}$, and 0.1, 0.5, 2.3, 11.3, 45.2, 135.7, 452.5 or 2262.4 ppm F$^-$ in each group for zinc and fluoride experiments, respectively, i.e., similar to those used in the previous studies (Mohammed et al., 2014a; Mohammed et al., 2015). Each disc was then demineralized for another 1 h, and the Ca$^{2+}$ activity was monitored at 1 min intervals as before. The temperature was maintained at 23.0±1.0 °C as in the previously reported studies (Mohammed et al., 2014a; Mohammed et al., 2015).

The Ca$^{2+}$ ISE readings (mV) were converted to concentration units (mM) using the calibration curve, and the Ca$^{2+}$ activity was plotted as a function of time (h) for each Zn$^{2+}$ or F$^-$ addition. The activity of Ca$^{2+}$ (mM) was plotted as a function of time (h) for each group, and the percentage reduction in the rate of calcium loss of HAP (PRCL$\text{HAP}$) for each Zn$^{2+}$ and F$^-$ addition was calculated in a way similar to PRML$\text{enamel}$, which was the ratio between the rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release after the topical treatment ($R_a$) to the rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release before the topical treatment ($R_b$) (Eq. 6.1). Thereafter, PRCL$\text{HAP}$ could be used in the same way as PRML$\text{enamel}$ and was plotted as a function of [Zn$^{2+}$] and [F$^-$], similar to the previous studies (Mohammed et al., 2014a; Mohammed et al., 2015).
PRCL = \( (1 - \frac{R_a}{R_b}) \times 100\% \) \hspace{1cm} (Eq. 6.1)

PRCL = Percentage reduction in the rate of calcium loss

\( R_a = \) The rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release after the topical treatment

\( R_b = \) The rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release before the topical treatment
6.4 Results

The calibration plot of the Ca\textsuperscript{2+} ISE (Fig. 6.3) shows a linear relationship between mV and log activity (R\textsuperscript{2} = 1.00) for Ca\textsuperscript{2+} activity greater than 0.023 mM (lower limit of detection, LLOD). A linear regression line was used to convert ISE mV to mM. Values below the linear Nernstian response region of the calibration curve were not used. The error of the gradient was calculated using SigmaPlot 10.0 (Systat Software, California, USA).

\begin{figure}[h]
\centering
\includegraphics[width=\textwidth]{figure6.3.png}
\caption{Calibration curve of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} ISE. LLOD = lower limit of detection.}
\end{figure}
**Fig. 6.4a** shows a typical plot of Ca\(^{2+}\) release from a demineralising HAP disc before and after addition of 1.8 ppm Zn\(^{2+}\). The Ca\(^{2+}\) release was approximately linear both before and after the addition of Zn\(^{2+}\). The rate of the Ca\(^{2+}\) release was \(\approx 0.081\text{ mM/h}\) before and \(\approx 0.034\text{ mM/h}\) after the addition of Zn\(^{2+}\).

**Fig. 6.4b** shows a typical plot of Ca\(^{2+}\) release from a demineralising HAP disc before and after addition of 107.0 ppm Zn\(^{2+}\). The Ca\(^{2+}\) release was approximately linear both before and after the addition of Zn\(^{2+}\). The rate of the Ca\(^{2+}\) release was \(\approx 0.101\text{ mM/h}\) before and \(\approx 0.011\text{ mM/h}\) after the addition of Zn\(^{2+}\). The reduction in the rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release after addition of 107.0 ppm Zn\(^{2+}\) was more than that after the addition of 1.8 ppm Zn\(^{2+}\).

Similar plots were obtained for all Zn\(^{2+}\) additions, with a reduction in the rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release increased with increasing \([\text{Zn}^{2+}]\) in the solutions.

**Table 6.1** shows the rates of calcium loss of HAP discs (RCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\) +/- standard error (SE)) before and after addition of 1.8 ppm and 107 ppm Zn\(^{2+}\) of the **Fig. 6.4**. Errors of gradients were calculated using SigmaPlot 10.0 (Systat Software, California, USA). In each treatment group, the R\(_a\) was significantly different (p value < 0.05) from the R\(_b\).
Figure 6.4 - Typical data collected from one HAP disc with additions of (a) 1.8 ppm Zn$^{2+}$ and (b) 107 ppm Zn$^{2+}$ groups.

Table 6.1 - RCL$_{HAP}$ before and after Zn$^{2+}$ addition of the Fig. 6.4.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>R$_b$+/SE (X 10$^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>R$_a$+/SE (X 10$^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.8 ppm Zn$^{2+}$</td>
<td>81.02 ± 0.70</td>
<td>33.94 ± 0.20</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>107 ppm Zn$^{2+}$</td>
<td>100.90 ± 0.30</td>
<td>11.15 ± 0.30</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Fig. 6.5a** shows a typical plot of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release from a demineralising HAP disc before and after addition of 2.3 ppm F\textsuperscript{-}. The Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was approximately linear both before and after the addition of F\textsuperscript{-}. The rate of the Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was \( \approx 0.055 \text{ mM/h} \) before and \( \approx 0.027 \text{ mM/h} \) after addition of F\textsuperscript{-}.

**Fig. 6.5b** shows a typical plot of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release from a demineralising HAP disc before and after addition of 45.2 ppm F\textsuperscript{-}. The Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was approximately linear both before and after the addition of F\textsuperscript{-}. The rate of the Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was \( \approx 0.070 \text{ mM/h} \) before and \( \approx 0.016 \text{ mM/h} \) after addition of F\textsuperscript{-}. The reduction in the rate of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release after addition of 45.2 ppm F\textsuperscript{-} was more than that after the addition of 2.3 ppm F\textsuperscript{-}.

Similar plots were obtained for all F\textsuperscript{-} additions, with a reduction in the rate of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release increased with increasing [F\textsuperscript{-}] in the solutions.

**Table 6.2** shows the RCL_{HAP+/SE} before and after addition of 2.3 ppm and 45.2 ppm F\textsuperscript{-} of the **Fig. 6.5**. Errors of gradients were calculated using SigmaPlot 10.0 (Systat Software, California, USA). In each treatment group, the R\textsubscript{a} was significantly different (p value < 0.05) from the R\textsubscript{b}. 

64
Figure 6.5 - Typical data collected from one HAP disc with additions of (a) 2.3 ppm F⁻ and (b) 45.2 ppm F⁻ groups.

Table 6.2 - RCL\textsubscript{HAP} before and after F⁻ addition of the Fig. 6.5.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>( R_{b+}/SE \times 10^{-3} \text{mM/h} )</th>
<th>( R_{a+/}SE \times 10^{-3} \text{mM/h} )</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2.3 ppm F⁻</td>
<td>54.99 ± 0.20</td>
<td>26.98 ± 0.20</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45.2 ppm F⁻</td>
<td>69.63 ± 0.60</td>
<td>15.70 ± 0.10</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Table 6.3 and Table 6.4 show the RCL\textsubscript{HAP+/-SE} (X 10\textsuperscript{-3} mM/h) and the PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} measured at increasing [Zn\textsuperscript{2+}] and [F\textsuperscript{-}] in the solution. Every R\textsubscript{b} (RCL\textsubscript{HAP}) measured at each [Zn\textsuperscript{2+}] and [F\textsuperscript{-}] was significantly different (p < 0.05) from the R\textsubscript{b} (RCL\textsubscript{HAP}).

The mean PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} (%) in both Zn\textsuperscript{2+} and F\textsuperscript{-} experiments show that inhibitory efficacy on demineralisation of HAP discs increased with increasing [Zn\textsuperscript{2+}] and [F\textsuperscript{-}]. Complete inhibition was achieved at 356 ppm Zn\textsuperscript{2+} and at 452.5 ppm F\textsuperscript{-}; respectively.

Table 6.3 – The RCL\textsubscript{HAP} and PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} of every HAP disc measured at each [Zn\textsuperscript{2+}].

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[Zn\textsuperscript{2+}]</th>
<th>HAP Disc</th>
<th>R\textsubscript{b+/-SE} (X 10\textsuperscript{-3} mM/h)</th>
<th>R\textsubscript{a+/-SE} (X 10\textsuperscript{-3} mM/h)</th>
<th>PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} (%)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.1 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>37.63 ± 0.20</td>
<td>2.39 ± 0.88</td>
<td>36.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>139.10 ± 0.30</td>
<td>110.50 ± 0.70</td>
<td>20.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>97.54 ± 0.40</td>
<td>72.38 ± 0.40</td>
<td>25.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>91.42 ± 29.45</td>
<td>68.93 ± 25.06</td>
<td>27.6 ± 4.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.4 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>73.26 ± 0.70</td>
<td>36.40 ± 0.40</td>
<td>50.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>74.17 ± 1.80</td>
<td>44.60 ± 1.50</td>
<td>39.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>85.4 ± 0.30</td>
<td>51.5 ± 0.60</td>
<td>39.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>77.62 ± 3.90</td>
<td>44.17 ± 4.36</td>
<td>43.3 ± 3.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.8 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>52.83 ± 0.10</td>
<td>27.91 ± 0.30</td>
<td>47.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>81.02 ± 0.70</td>
<td>33.94 ± 0.20</td>
<td>58.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>29.07 ± 0.80</td>
<td>10.40 ± 0.50</td>
<td>64.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>54.31 ± 15.01</td>
<td>24.09 ± 7.06</td>
<td>56.5 ± 5.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>55.45 ± 0.50</td>
<td>15.65 ± 0.10</td>
<td>71.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>66.85 ± 0.60</td>
<td>14.82 ± 0.20</td>
<td>77.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>94.99 ± 0.50</td>
<td>27.02 ± 0.60</td>
<td>71.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>72.41 ± 11.75</td>
<td>19.16 ± 3.94</td>
<td>73.7 ± 2.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>46.55 ± 0.40</td>
<td>9.73 ± 0.10</td>
<td>79.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>68.58 ± 0.20</td>
<td>18.42 ± 0.20</td>
<td>73.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>46.20 ± 0.20</td>
<td>10.49 ± 0.08</td>
<td>77.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>53.78 ± 7.40</td>
<td>12.88 ± 2.78</td>
<td>76.5 ± 1.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>107 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>66.15 ± 0.50</td>
<td>2.76 ± 0.2</td>
<td>95.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>100.90 ± 0.30</td>
<td>11.15 ± 0.30</td>
<td>88.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>61.76 ± 0.70</td>
<td>14.32 ± 0.50</td>
<td>76.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>76.27 ± 12.38</td>
<td>9.41 ± 3.45</td>
<td>87.2 ± 5.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>356 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>44.17 ± 0.50</td>
<td>-1.44 ± 1.50</td>
<td>103.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>149.50 ± 0.50</td>
<td>0.80 ± 1.20</td>
<td>94.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>96.19 ± 0.50</td>
<td>-2.85 ± 0.70</td>
<td>103.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>96.62 ± 30.41</td>
<td>1.17 ± 3.34</td>
<td><strong>100.0 ± 2.8</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1782 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>103.10 ± 0.10</td>
<td>-10.40 ± 1.20</td>
<td>110.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>118.10 ± 0.30</td>
<td>2.33 ± 1.10</td>
<td>98.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>111.50 ± 0.60</td>
<td>2.60 ± 1.20</td>
<td>97.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>110.90 ± 4.34</td>
<td>-1.82 ± 4.29</td>
<td><strong>100.0 ± 4.1</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Table 6.4 - The RCL<sub>HAP</sub> and PRCL<sub>HAP</sub> of every HAP disc measured at each [F].

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[F]</th>
<th>HAP Disc</th>
<th>R&lt;sub&gt;6&lt;/sub&gt;/±SE (X 10&lt;sup&gt;-3&lt;/sup&gt; mM/h)</th>
<th>R&lt;sub&gt;c&lt;/sub&gt;/±SE (X 10&lt;sup&gt;-3&lt;/sup&gt; mM/h)</th>
<th>PRCL&lt;sub&gt;HAP&lt;/sub&gt; (%)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.1 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>74.69 ± 0.20</td>
<td>62.54 ± 0.30</td>
<td>16.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>113.50 ± 0.90</td>
<td>78.74 ± 0.10</td>
<td>30.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>52.50 ± 0.20</td>
<td>41.19 ± 0.40</td>
<td>21.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>80.23 ± 17.83</td>
<td>60.82 ± 10.87</td>
<td>22.8 ± 4.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.5 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>114.10 ± 0.20</td>
<td>73.70 ± 0.20</td>
<td>35.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>58.64 ± 0.10</td>
<td>33.41 ± 0.20</td>
<td>43.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>61.73 ± 0.20</td>
<td>37.93 ± 0.20</td>
<td>38.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>78.16 ± 17.99</td>
<td>48.35 ± 12.74</td>
<td>39.0 ± 2.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.3 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>71.77 ± 0.30</td>
<td>30.40 ± 0.30</td>
<td>57.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>54.99 ± 0.20</td>
<td>26.98 ± 0.20</td>
<td>51.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>71.23 ± 0.40</td>
<td>28.69 ± 0.10</td>
<td>59.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>66.00 ± 5.10</td>
<td>28.69 ± 0.99</td>
<td>56.1 ± 2.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11.3 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>45.09 ± 0.20</td>
<td>13.50 ± 0.15</td>
<td>70.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>117.70 ± 0.60</td>
<td>34.42 ± 0.20</td>
<td>70.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>82.92 ± 0.60</td>
<td>29.15 ± 0.20</td>
<td>64.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>81.92 ± 21.00</td>
<td>25.69 ± 6.28</td>
<td>68.6 ± 1.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45.2 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>65.57 ± 0.20</td>
<td>11.48 ± 0.10</td>
<td>82.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>77.03 ± 0.50</td>
<td>13.71 ± 0.10</td>
<td>82.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>69.63 ± 0.60</td>
<td>15.70 ± 0.10</td>
<td>77.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>70.74 ± 3.35</td>
<td>13.63 ± 1.22</td>
<td>80.7 ± 1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>135.7 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>43.88 ± 0.20</td>
<td>7.65 ± 0.01</td>
<td>82.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>110.40 ± 0.50</td>
<td>22.25 ± 0.30</td>
<td>79.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>100.40 ± 0.60</td>
<td>16.69 ± 0.40</td>
<td>83.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>84.89 ± 20.71</td>
<td>15.56 ± 4.26</td>
<td>81.9 ± 1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>452.5 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>51.75 ± 0.10</td>
<td>3.32 ± 1.50</td>
<td>93.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>75.12 ± 0.40</td>
<td>-7.01 ± 1.20</td>
<td>109.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>80.33 ± 0.60</td>
<td>-4.92 ± 1.40</td>
<td>106.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>69.07 ± 8.79</td>
<td>-2.87 ± 3.15</td>
<td>100.0 ± 4.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2262.4 ppm</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>66.00 ± 0.10</td>
<td>-15.95 ± 1.40</td>
<td>124.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>67.13 ± 0.10</td>
<td>-11.58 ± 2.20</td>
<td>117.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>73.16 ± 0.50</td>
<td>-16.95 ± 2.60</td>
<td>123.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>68.76 ± 2.22</td>
<td>-14.83 ± 1.65</td>
<td>100.0 ± 2.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Fig. 6.6a and Fig. 6.7a show the mean PRCL<sub>HAP</sub> plotted as the logarithm of [Zn<sup>2+</sup>] and [F<sup>-</sup>], both showing a log-linear relationship. Both PRCL<sub>HAP</sub> of Zn<sup>2+</sup> and F<sup>-</sup> increased with increasing concentrations. The PRCL<sub>HAP</sub> of Zn<sup>2+</sup> reached 100% at 356.0 ppm, and the PRCL<sub>HAP</sub> of F<sup>-</sup> reached 100% at 452.5 ppm.

Fig. 6.6b and Fig. 6.7b show the log-linear relationships between mean PRML<sub>enamel</sub> of Zn<sup>2+</sup> and F<sup>-</sup> and their concentrations reported by Mohammed et al. (2014a & 2015), which are similar to those reported in this study.
Figure 6.6 - (a) Log-linear relationship established between mean PRCL_{HAP} and [Zn^{2+}]. (b) Log-linear relationship established between mean PRML_{enamel} and [Zn^{2+}] (Replotted from Mohammed et al., 2015). Error bars show the standard errors.
Figure 6.7 – (a) Log-linear relationship established between mean PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} and [F]. (b) Log-linear relationship established between mean PRML\textsubscript{enamel} and [F] (Replotted from Mohammed et al., 2014a). Error bars show the standard errors.
6.5 Discussion

The release of Ca\(^{2+}\), used in this study as a proxy for demineralisation, was linear during real-time monitoring both before, and after the additions of Zn\(^{2+}\) and F\(^{-}\) (Fig. 6.4 and Fig. 6.5) for all inhibitor concentrations used. This is similar to the data reported in the previous SMR studies, although over a different time-scale (Mohammed et al., 2014a; Mohammed et al., 2015). This suggests that the cariostatic influence is immediate (within the time-frame of the methodology), with no accumulation of inhibitor action. The changes in slope immediately after inhibitor addition show the changes in rates of calcium loss by the effects of Zn\(^{2+}\) and F\(^{-}\). The log-linear relationships between mean PRCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\) and inhibitor concentrations (Fig. 6.6a and Fig. 6.7a) are similar to those previously reported by Mohammed et al. (2014a & 2015) (Fig. 6.6b and Fig. 6.7b), confirming the validity of the ISE methodology. Further, although the underlying reasons for the log-linear dose-response remain uncertain, the fact that this is repeatable using both methodologies suggests that the log-linear dose-response is a function of the chemistry of the interaction between these inhibitor ions and the inhibition of demineralisation. It has been proposed that the log-linear dependency of inhibition of demineralisation on Zn\(^{2+}\) and F\(^{-}\) may be due to the availability of fewer PO\(_{4}^{3-}\) and Ca\(^{2+}\) sites with increasing [Zn\(^{2+}\)] and [F\(^{-}\)], and therefore more and more Zn\(^{2+}\) and F\(^{-}\) are competing for a smaller number of these unoccupied sites on the HAP crystal surfaces (Mohammed et al., 2014a; Mohammed et al., 2015).

In this study, HAP discs were utilised to simulate the demineralisation of human enamel under carious simulating condition, with or without the additions of inhibitors. The demineralisation process of HAP disc under carious or erosive challenge has been extensively investigated using different real-time monitoring techniques (Anderson et al., 2004a; do Amaral et al., 2016; Jones et al., 2013; Kosoric et al., 2010). Anderson et al. found that the mineral loss of HAP is linear with time for over 100 h using scanning micro-radiography (SMR) (Anderson et al., 2004a). As the rate of mineral mass loss is constant, the process should be controlled by the reaction taking place at the advancing front. Similarly, it has been reported that both dissolution rates of enamel and HAP were constant, while the former was faster than the latter due to structural and compositional
differences between them (Berkovitz, 2011; Bollet-Quivogne et al., 2005; Shellis et al., 2010) (Section 1.3). This indicated that the demineralisation process of HAP is qualitatively similar to enamel but is quantitatively different. Consequently, the preliminary demineralisation research using HAP is useful to understand a simplified reaction occurring between the solution and dental mineral, even though the confirmatory work on the dental hard tissue is still necessary. In the present study, mean PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} reached 100 % for [Zn\textsuperscript{2+}] above 356.0 ppm and for [F\textsuperscript{-}] above 452.5 ppm.

As ISE measures the activity of Ca\textsuperscript{2+}, representing the quantity of ion concentration corrected for interionic interactions, the data can be directly related to the chemical reactions occurring during the process (Rundle, 2000). This real-time Ca\textsuperscript{2+} ISE methodology can be used in studies of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} loss such as teeth, bones or dental materials, which make it a potential analytic tool to be utilised in a broader scale (Jeffcoat, 1998; Kumar et al., 2013; Tezel et al., 2011). For examples, Ca\textsuperscript{2+} loss from teeth and bones can be investigated to study dental caries, dental erosion or osteoporosis (Jeffcoat, 1998; Kumar et al., 2013; Tezel et al., 2011). Further, the Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release from some Ca\textsuperscript{2+}-containing dental materials such as casein phosphopeptide amorphous calcium phosphate (CPP-ACP) can be investigated to study its therapeutic effect on enamel demineralisation (Somasundaram et al., 2013).

This study reproduced the results of Mohammed et al. (2014a & 2015) demonstrating a similar log-relationship established between mean PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} and inhibitor concentration, which validated the use of real-time ISE as an effective \textit{in vitro} method for monitoring demineralisation kinetics. Further, even though the real-time Ca\textsuperscript{2+} ISE system monitors the demineralisation indirectly from the solution, whereas, SMR monitors the demineralisation directly from the mineral mass of the specimen, the results showed that the values of PRCL and PRML (\textit{i.e.}, from the two different techniques) are similar.
6.6 Conclusion

In conclusion, the demineralisation of dental mineral can be monitored by continuously recording the concentration of Ca$^{2+}$ in the solution in contact with the dental mineral using real-time Ca$^{2+}$ ISE measurements.

The technique can detect very small changes in rate because a large number of data points are measured before and after treatment.
PART IV: EXPERIMENTAL STUDIES
Chapter 7 A SMR STUDY OF THE DOSE-RESPONSE EFFECTS OF SILVER IONS IN SOLUTION ON DEMINERALISATION OF HUMAN ENAMEL

7.1 Introduction

The understanding of the effects of Ag\(^+\) (in solution) on demineralisation is crucial for the interpretation of the effects of topical treatments with silver compounds on demineralisation. It has been reported that following immersion of hydroxyapatite (HAP) in AgNO\(_3\), Ag\(^+\) can substitute for the Ca\(^{2+}\) in HAP, forming “Ca\(_{10-x}\)Ag\(_x\)(PO\(_4\))\(_6\)(OH)\(_2\)” (Ling Feng et al., 1998; Singh et al., 2011). Further, the susceptibility of the Ag\(^+\) substituted HAP to acid attack has been reported to increase with increasing incorporation of Ag\(^+\) in the HAP (Singh et al., 2011). Therefore, the Ag\(^+\) has an accelerating effect on demineralisation of HAP by the formation of a Ag\(^+\) substituted HAP. The chemical formula of Ag\(^+\) substituted HAP, Ca\(_{10-x}\)Ag\(_x\)(PO\(_4\))\(_6\)(OH)\(_2\), proposed in the previous study (Singh et al., 2011) does not have a balance in charge, as it requires two one-charged Ag\(^+\) to replace one two-charged Ca\(^{2+}\). Therefore, the correct stoichiometry for a Ag\(^+\) substituted HAP should be Ca\(_{10-x}\)Ag\(_{2x}\)(PO\(_4\))\(_6\)(OH)\(_2\). Further studies are required to confirm the stoichiometry.

The reaction between Ag\(^+\) and human enamel, mainly composed of HAP (Hicks et al., 2004), should be similar to that of HAP. This suggests that the demineralisation of human enamel would increase with increasing concentration of Ag\(^+\) in solution in contact with the human enamel, as reported by Singh et al. (2011). However, as human enamel has composition gradients and a hierarchical structure which are different from synthetic HAP discs (Section 1.3) (Robinson et al., 2000; Robinson, 2009; Yilmaz et al., 2015), a confirmatory study is still needed.

Scanning microradiography (SMR) is a real-time technique which can monitor the mineral loss of a demineralising specimen in controlled conditions based on the attenuation of X-ray beams (Anderson and Elliott, 1993). Further, SMR has
been used in previous studies investigating the dose-response of other metal ions on demineralisation of human enamel (e.g., Zn$^{2+}$) (Mohammed et al., 2015).
7.2 Aim

The aim of this *in vitro* study was to investigate the dose-response effects of Ag⁺ in solution on demineralisation of a human enamel block using SMR.
7.3 Materials and Methods

7.3.1 Preparation of Enamel Block

An enamel block (5 mm X 5 mm with ~ 2mm in thickness) was sectioned from a caries-free permanent molar (QMREC 2011/99) using a cutting machine (Struers Accutom-5; USA). The dentine was polished away (300 LVAC, Kemet) with carbide papers with roughness up to P4000 under copious water cooling. Subsequently, the cut internal surface was coated with red nail lacquer (KIKO, Italy), and was put into a SMR environmental cell (volume = 2 cm³), leaving only the natural surface exposed (Fig 7.1).

Figure 7.1 – The SMR environmental cell containing an enamel block.
7.3.2 Preparation of the Demineralisation Solution

A 1 L, 0.1 M CH₃COOH (Sigma-Aldrich, UK) demineralising solution buffered by adding 1.0 M KOH (Sigma-Aldrich, UK) drop by drop to pH 4.0 was prepared, as described in Section 6.3.2.

7.3.3 SMR Area Scan of the Sample

![Area scanning of an enamel block](image)

*Figure 7.2 – Area scanning of an enamel block. The coloured scale (on right) represents the projected mineral mass (g*cm⁻²) in the sample. The white crosses show the three scan points.*

After the SMR cell containing the enamel sample was mounted on the SMR scanning stage, an SMR area scan of the enamel sample was performed. This provided an indication of the different projected mineral density levels of the sample and its exact location on the SMR stage (Fig. 7.2). Three scan points on the horizontal line, 0.5 mm apart, were chosen in the area with similar projected...
minerall mass. The mineral masses of these points were then monitored throughout the demineralisation period.

7.3.4 Demineralisation Study

Throughout the demineralisation study, the demineralisation solution was circulated at 0.788 mL/min, during which the X-ray beam was targeted at the three selected scan points. Subsequently, AgNO₃ (Sigma-Aldrich, UK) was added to the demineralisation solution to obtain concentrations of 0.0 ppm Ag⁺, 0.1 ppm Ag⁺, 9.0 ppm Ag⁺ and 3565.0 ppm Ag⁺. These four concentrations were chosen from the range of concentrations used in the previous SMR study investigating the dose-response of Zn²⁺ on enamel demineralisation (Mohammed et al., 2015). Further, the range of [Ag⁺] in saliva following topical treatment with Ag[NH₃]₂F has been reported to be between 2.36 X 10⁻³ M and 2.36 X 10⁻² M (= 254.9 ppm and 2548.8 ppm Ag⁺) (Mei et al., 2017), which was covered by the [Ag⁺] range in the present study.

Initially, demineralisation solution (without Ag⁺) was circulated through the SMR cell for a period around 30 h, whilst the mineral mass measurements of the three scan points were continuously monitored at 30 min intervals. After the initial demineralisation period, the SMR cell was circulated with the demineralisation solution containing 0.1 ppm Ag⁺, 9.0 ppm Ag⁺ and 3565.0 ppm Ag⁺ for a period around 30 h, respectively, whilst the mineral mass measurements of the three scan points were monitored throughout all the demineralisation periods. The study was carried out at 23.0±1.0 °C, as described in the previous Zn²⁺ study (Mohammed et al., 2015).

After the study, the mineral loss per unit area (g*cm⁻²) of each point measured at each [Ag⁺] was plotted as a function of time (h), and the rates of enamel mineral loss (RMLₑnamel) recorded at 0.1 ppm Ag⁺, 9.0 ppm Ag⁺ and 3565.0 ppm Ag⁺ were compared with that recorded during the initial demineralisation (without Ag⁺) for every scan point. Next, the percentage reduction in the rate of mineral loss of enamel (PRMLₑnamel) at each [Ag⁺] was calculated as the ratio of the RMLₑnamel at
that $[\text{Ag}^+]$ to the $\text{RML}_{\text{enamel}}$ without $\text{Ag}^+$ to assess the inhibitory efficacy of the $\text{Ag}^+$. A positive value of $\text{PRML}_{\text{enamel}}$ indicates the inhibition of enamel demineralisation, whereas, the negative value of $\text{PRML}_{\text{enamel}}$ indicates the acceleration of enamel demineralisation.
7.4 Results

Fig. 7.3 shows the trendlines of the mineral loss per unit area (g·cm⁻²) measured at the scan point 3 for 0.0 ppm Ag⁺ compared to that measured at the same scan point for (a) 0.1 ppm Ag⁺, (b) 9.0 ppm Ag⁺, and (c) 3565.0 ppm Ag⁺. The trendline observed for every [Ag⁺] was linear with time. Further, the RML_{enamel} (g·cm⁻²·h⁻¹) increased with increasing [Ag⁺] in the solution.

**Figure 7.3 – Trendlines of the mineral loss per unit area (g·cm⁻²) measured at the scan point 3 for 0.0 ppm Ag⁺ compared to that measured at the same scan point for (a) 0.1 ppm Ag⁺, (b) 9.0 ppm Ag⁺, and (c) 3565.0 ppm Ag⁺.**
Table 7.1 shows the RMLenamel +/- SE (X 10^{-4} g*cm^{2}*h^{-1}) and PRMLenamel (%) measured at different scan points for increasing [Ag^+] in the solution. The error of the gradient was calculated using SigmaPlot 10.0 (Systat Software, California, USA). PRMLenamel highlighted in red indicate that the RMLenamel measured at that [Ag^+] were not significantly different (p > 0.05) from the RMLenamel measured at 0 ppm Ag^+.

After an increase of [Ag^+] in the solution to 0.1 ppm, changes in the RMLenamel measured at the three scan points were not consistent with each other. The RMLenamel measured at the scan point 1 and 2 were inhibited, whereas that of the scan point 3 was increased. After the following increase of [Ag^+] in the solution to 9.0 ppm and 3565.0 ppm, all the RMLenamel measured at every scan point were increased.

The mean PRMLenamel (%) shows that minor inhibitory efficacy on enamel demineralisation was observed for 0.1 ppm Ag^+. However, this inhibitory efficacy disappeared with increasing [Ag^+], as the enamel demineralisation was accelerated with increasing [Ag^+] from 9.0 ppm to 3565.0 ppm Ag^+.
Table 7.1 – The RML\(_{\text{enamel}}\) and PRML\(_{\text{enamel}}\) measured at each point for every [Ag\(^{+}\)] in solution. PRML\(_{\text{enamel}}\) highlighted in red indicate that the RML\(_{\text{enamel}}\) were not significantly different from the RML\(_{\text{enamel}}\) measured at 0 ppm Ag\(^{+}\).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Scan Point</th>
<th>RML(_{\text{enamel}}) +/- SE (X 10(^{-4}) g*cm(^{-2})*h(^{-1}))</th>
<th>0 ppm Ag(^{+})</th>
<th>0.1 ppm Ag(^{+})</th>
<th>9 ppm Ag(^{+})</th>
<th>3565 ppm Ag(^{+})</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>RML(_{\text{enamel}}) +/- SE (X 10(^{-4}) g*cm(^{-2})*h(^{-1}))</td>
<td>2.5 ± 0.0</td>
<td>2.2 ± 0.1</td>
<td>2.5 ± 0.1</td>
<td>2.7 ± 0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRML(_{\text{enamel}}) (%)</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>12.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>-8.0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>RML(_{\text{enamel}}) +/- SE (X 10(^{-4}) g*cm(^{-2})*h(^{-1}))</td>
<td>1.1 ± 0.0</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.1</td>
<td>1.1 ± 0.1</td>
<td>1.2 ± 0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRML(_{\text{enamel}}) (%)</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>9.1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>-9.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>RML(_{\text{enamel}}) +/- SE (X 10(^{-4}) g*cm(^{-2})*h(^{-1}))</td>
<td>1.7 ± 0.0</td>
<td>1.8 ± 0.1</td>
<td>2.1 ± 0.1</td>
<td>2.4 ± 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRML(_{\text{enamel}}) (%)</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>-5.9</td>
<td>-23.5</td>
<td>-41.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Average</td>
<td>Mean RML(_{\text{enamel}}) (X 10(^{-4}) g*cm(^{-2})*h(^{-1}))</td>
<td>1.8 ± 0.4</td>
<td>1.7 ± 0.4</td>
<td>1.9 ± 0.4</td>
<td>2.1 ± 0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mean PRML(_{\text{enamel}}) (%)</td>
<td>0.0 ± 0.0</td>
<td>5.1 ± 5.5</td>
<td>-7.8 ± 7.8</td>
<td>-19.4 ± 10.9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Fig. 7.4** shows a log-linear relationship ($R^2 = 0.99$) between the mean PRML_ename and the [Ag$^+$] in the solution. This log-linear dependency indicates that enamel exhibited increasingly faster demineralisation at a higher [Ag$^+$].

![Graph showing log-linear relationship between mean PRML_ename and [Ag$^+$]](image)

**Figure 7.4** – The mean PRML_ename plotted against increasing [Ag$^+$] in the demineralisation solution. Error bars show the standard errors.
7.5 Discussion

This *in vitro* study investigated the effects of increasing [Ag⁺] on the demineralisation of human enamel using SMR. Three concentrations (0.1 ppm, 9.0 ppm and 3565.0 ppm) of Ag⁺ and a control (0 ppm) were selected in the present study, mirroring the concentrations used in the previous SMR study investigating the dose-response effects of Zn²⁺ on enamel demineralisation (Mohammed *et al.*, 2015). This enabled the comparison of the dose-response effects of these two metal ions on the enamel demineralisation under the same condition.

As human enamel has variations in compositions, which would, therefore, result in a difference in solubility (Robinson *et al.*, 1995), demineralisation studies using different specimens in control and experimental groups require a large number of enamel samples to ensure the reproducibility. In this study, the rates of enamel demineralisation measured at each scan point for 0.1 ppm, 9.0 ppm and 3565.0 ppm of [Ag⁺] were compared with the rates of enamel initial demineralisation (without Ag⁺) measured at the same scan point with similar mineral mass on the same enamel sample. Therefore, numerous samples were not necessary as each scan point acted as its own control.

In the present study, all the trends in mineral loss from demineralising enamel observed were linear with time (*Fig. 7.3*), which is consistent with previous SMR studies (Anderson *et al.*, 1998; Anderson *et al.*, 2004a; Mohammed *et al.*, 2014a; Mohammed *et al.*, 2015). Even though the mean RML<sub>enamel</sub> values measured at three scan points for each [Ag⁺] were different, the change of mean PRML<sub>enamel</sub> with increasing [Ag⁺] measured at each scan point showed a similar trend (*Table 7.1*). The effects of 0.1 ppm Ag⁺ on demineralisation of enamel were not consistent between scan points, as the mean RML<sub>enamel</sub> of scan points 1 and 2 were decreased, whereas, the mean RML<sub>enamel</sub> of the scan point 3 was increased after the addition of Ag⁺ (*Table 7.1*). This may be due to that the effect of Ag⁺ was not strong enough at this low [Ag⁺] to show a consistent effect on all the scan points of the enamel. Following the increase of [Ag⁺] to 9.0 ppm and then further to 3565.0 ppm, the mean RML<sub>enamel</sub> at all scan points kept increasing (*Table 7.1*).
The increase in mean $RML_{\text{enamel}}$ may be due to the substitution of $Ca^{2+}$ by $Ag^+$, forming $Ag^+$ substituted enamel, which has a higher susceptibility to acid challenge than that of enamel (Singh et al., 2011). The increased susceptibility of the $Ag^+$ substituted enamel to acid challenge may result from the difference between the charges of $Ag^+$ and $Ca^{2+}$, which made $Ag^+$ unable to facilitate proper bonding with other ions, and thereby destabilised the HAP lattice. Therefore, the increase in mean $RML_{\text{enamel}}$ following the increase of $[Ag^+]$ to 9.0 ppm and to 3565.0 ppm indicates that the formation of $Ag^+$ substituted enamel dominated the dose-response effects of $Ag^+$ on enamel demineralisation at these $[Ag^+]$.

The change in the mean $PRML_{\text{enamel}}$ (from 5.1±5.5 % to -7.8±7.8 %) following $[Ag^+]$ increased from 0.1 ppm to 9.0 ppm (an increase of 8.9 ppm $Ag^+$), was comparable to that (from -7.8±7.8 % to -19.4±10.9 %) following $[Ag^+]$ increased from 9.0 ppm to 3565.0 ppm (an increase of 3556.0 ppm $Ag^+$) (Table 7.1). This indicates that $Ag^+$ exhibited a greater change in accelerating enamel demineralisation at lower $[Ag^+]$ compared to higher $[Ag^+]$, which led to a log-linear relationship observed between the mean $PRML_{\text{enamel}}$ and the $[Ag^+]$ (Fig. 7.4).

In a previous SMR study of the dose-response effects of $Zn^{2+}$ on enamel demineralisation, a log-linear relationship was also found between the mean $PRML_{\text{enamel}}$ and $[Zn^{2+}]$. More noticeably, the inhibitory efficacy of $Zn^{2+}$ increased with increasing $[Zn^{2+}]$ (Fig. 7.5) (Mohammed et al., 2015). The difference between the effects of $Ag^+$ and $Zn^{2+}$ on the enamel demineralisation may be due to the ability of the ion in substituting for the $Ca^{2+}$ in HAP. So far, no substitution of $Ca^{2+}$ in HAP with $Zn^{2+}$ has been reported. It has been proposed that all attempts to produce $Zn^{2+}$ substituted apatite resulted in a mixture of phase such as $Zn_3(PO_4)_2 \cdot 4H_2O$ (McConnell and Foreman, 1966; Mohammed et al., 2014b).
The log-linear dependency of the inhibition of enamel demineralisation on $[\text{Zn}^{2+}]$ was suggested to be due to the occupation of the $\text{PO}_4^{3-}$ sites on enamel surfaces (Mohammed et al., 2015). As the number of the $\text{PO}_4^{3-}$ sites unoccupied with $\text{Zn}^{2+}$ is decreased with increasing $[\text{Zn}^{2+}]$, the increase in the inhibitory efficacy is decreased with increasing $[\text{Zn}^{2+}]$, as more and more $\text{Zn}^{2+}$ are competing for a smaller number of the unoccupied sites on the enamel surface. Whereas, the log-linear dependency of acceleration of enamel demineralisation on $[\text{Ag}^+]$ may be due to the number of the $\text{Ca}^{2+}$ sites on the enamel surfaces able to be substituted by $\text{Ag}^+$, decreased with increasing $[\text{Ag}^+]$, which led to less change in the mean PRML$_{\text{enamel}}$ exhibited at higher $[\text{Ag}^+]$ range. This is shown schematically in Fig. 7.6.

Therefore, $\text{Ag}^+$ accelerates the enamel demineralisation. Thus, the cariostatic effects of AgNO$_3$ topical treatment on carious enamel must be due to the antibacterial properties of Ag$^+$ (Lansdown, 2002; Lansdown, 2006; Russell and Hugo, 1994; Thibodeau et al., 1978) (Section 3.2). Further, as the accelerating effect on enamel demineralisation of $\text{Ag}^+$ increases with increasing concentration, the concentration of AgNO$_3$ topically applied on the enamel should not be too high, in order to obtain an optimal therapeutic outcome.
Figure 7.6 – Schematic representation of the log-linear dependency of the acceleration of enamel demineralisation on [Ag+] showing a decreasing number of Ca^{2+} sites can be substituted by Ag^{+} with increasing [Ag^{+}].
7.6 Conclusion

There is a negative dose-response effect of Ag\(^+\) in solution on the demineralisation inhibition of human enamel. Further, there is a log-linear relationship between the inhibitory efficacy and the [Ag\(^+\)].
Chapter 8 EFFECTS OF TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION OF HAP DISCS

8.1 Introduction

Silver nitrate (AgNO₃), silver fluoride (AgF) and silver diammine fluoride (SDF, Ag[NH₃]₂F) have been used for the management of dental caries for many decades (Peng et al., 2012) (Chapter 3). Currently, Ag[NH₃]₂F is the most popular silver compound used in clinical practice (Horst et al., 2016). Different concentrations of Ag[NH₃]₂F are used in commercial products, with 3.16 M (Silver Capsule of Riva Star, SDI Ltd, Australia) the highest concentration available (Fung et al., 2013; SDI, 2016a).

The inhibitory mechanisms of these silver compound topical treatments on dental mineral demineralisation remain obscure (Mei et al., 2017; Zhao et al., 2017a). Therefore, real-time Ca²⁺ ISEs were used in this study to measure the reduction in the rate of Ca²⁺ release following topical treatments with 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, as an assessment of the caries inhibition efficacy (Huang et al., 2018). Furthermore, Ag⁺ and F⁻ ISEs are also available (Section 5.2), which can be used to investigate the interactions of F⁻ and Ag⁺ with dental mineral following treatments with silver compounds. NaF was not used to assess the inhibitory efficacy of the topical treatment with fluoride in the present study as the highest concentration of NaF agent is only about 0.95 M.

³¹P and ¹⁹F Magic Angle Spinning–Nuclear Magnetic Resonance (MAS–NMR) characterisation studies have been used in dental research to identify apatite species (Tsai and Chan, 2011), and to differentiate between FAP, fluorohydroxyapatite (FHA), CaF₂ and HAP (Mohammed et al., 2013; White et al., 1994; White et al., 1988). Therefore, they can be used to detect any phosphorous and fluorine reaction products formed after the interactions between silver compounds and dental mineral.
Photographs of the dental mineral samples (e.g., HAP discs) topically treated with silver compounds can also be used to monitor discolouration. As Ag$_3$PO$_4$ is yellow (Lewis, 1920), which is chemically reduced to black metallic silver after exposure to light and/or heat (Lou et al., 2011), colour changes of lesions following the silver compound topical treatments can indicate Ag$_3$PO$_4$ formation.
8.2 Aims

The first aim was to understand the inhibitory mechanisms of AgNO$_3$, AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatments on the demineralisation of HAP discs. This was achieved by investigating the effects of topical treatments with AgNO$_3$, AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on the demineralisation of HAP discs, using: Ca$^{2+}$, Ag$^+$ and F$^-$ ion selective electrodes (ISEs), digital camera, scanning electron microscopy (SEM), energy dispersive X-ray analysis (EDX). Further, $^{31}$P and $^{19}$F MAS-NMR were also used to identify any phosphorous and fluoride reaction products formed following the interactions between silver compounds and HAP powders.

The second aim was to compare the inhibitory efficacy and the effects of topical treatment with a commercial Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F product with laboratory-prepared Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on demineralisation of HAP discs. This was achieved by investigating the effects of topical treatment with Silver Capsule of Riva Star, on the demineralisation inhibition of HAP discs, using the techniques mentioned above.
8.3 Materials and Methods

ISE study, digital imaging, and SEM and EDX analyses were conducted using HAP discs topically treated with AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F, which underwent demineralisation. ³¹P and ¹⁹F MAS-NMR analyses were conducted on HAP powders mixed with these silver compounds, with and without acid challenge. As the amounts of reaction products formed in these mixed powders were large, the changes in the proportions of the reaction products before and after acid challenge can be monitored.

8.3.1 ISE Study

![Figure 8.1 – Nail-varnished porous HAP discs.](image)

Fifteen porous HAP discs (20% porosity, 12 mm in diameter, 2 mm in thickness; Plasma Biotal Ltd, UK) were varnished with red nail lacquer (KIKO, Italy) to leave only a 3 mm X 4 mm window on each sample exposed (Fig. 8.1). The window sizes were standardised to control the area exposed to acid challenge. The varnished discs were then allocated into five treatment groups (n = 3 each) (shown in Table 8.1). The demineralisation solution was made using 0.1 M CH₃COOH buffered to pH 4.0, using KOH, as described in Section 6.3.2.
**Table 8.1** – Compositions of treatment groups.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group names</th>
<th>Compositions</th>
<th>Preparation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>De-ionised water</td>
<td>From Triplered Ltd (UK)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO₃ Tx</td>
<td>3.16 M AgNO₃</td>
<td>1.07 g AgNO₃ + 2 mL DW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF Tx</td>
<td>3.16 M AgF</td>
<td>0.80 g AgF + 2 mL DW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td>3.16 M SDF</td>
<td>0.80 g AgF + 1 mL DW + 1 mL 30 wt% NH₄OH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>Silver Capsule (3.16 M SDF)</td>
<td>Riva Star of SDI Ltd (Australia)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* = all chemicals shown in preparation are from Sigma-Aldrich, UK

Calibrations of Ca²⁺, F⁻ and Ag⁺ ISEs were conducted before the experiment, as described in Section 6.3.3, but at 37±0.3 °C (LLOD of Ca²⁺: 0.023 mM, LLOD of F⁻: 0.001 mM, LLOD of Ag⁺: 0.001 mM). Further, the activity coefficient of each ion was calculated with an ionic speciation program (Chemist, MicroMath, USA) (activity coefficient of Ca²⁺ ≈ 0.6, F⁻ ≈ 1, Ag⁺ ≈ 1).

In the ISE study, the top of the beaker was covered by parafilm and the beaker was surrounded by foil to minimise evaporation and avoid the exposure to light. The thermometer of the hotplate of the stirrer was used to heat up and maintain the solution at 37±0.3 °C, and the thermometer of the ISE was used to monitor the temperature. The stirring speed was set at the lowest to avoid too much agitation during the experiments. Ca²⁺, Ag⁺ and F⁻ ISEs were used to simultaneously monitor the activities of Ca²⁺, F⁻ and Ag⁺ as demineralisation progressed, at intervals of 1 min (Fig. 8.2a and b).
Figure 8.2 – a. Schematic representation of setup of the ISE study at 37±0.3°C; b. Photo of the ISE setup in the study (F- ISE was behind Ca2+ ISE).
The protocol used in the ISE study is shown as a flowchart (Fig. 8.3). Firstly, each varnished HAP disc was immersed in 50 mL of demineralisation solution at 37±0.3 °C for 4 h using a temperature stabilised stirrer (Stuart UC152D/KIT, UK). After 4 h demineralisation, the demineralised HAP discs were taken out, rinsed with DW, air-dried, and topically treated with the pre-assigned application agent for 1 min using a micro-brush (Centrix, USA), followed by air-drying. This protocol was as similar to the clinical procedures recommended by Crystal and Niederman (2016) as could be achieved in the present in vitro study. Each disc was then further demineralised for another 4 h, and the ion activities of Ca\(^{2+}\), Ag\(^{+}\) and F\(^{-}\) were monitored at 1 min intervals using ISEs as before.

Finally, the activity of Ca\(^{2+}\) (mM) was plotted as a function of time (h) for each group, and the percentage reduction in the rate of calcium loss of HAP (PRCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\)) for each treatment was calculated, as described in Section 6.3.4. The activities of F\(^{-}\) and Ag\(^{+}\) were similarly plotted as a function of time.

8.3.2 Digital Photographs

Digital photographs of the HAP discs in each treatment group were taken using a digital camera (Olympus TG-5, Japan) after the first 4 h demineralisation, after topical treatments, and after further 4 h demineralisation, in order to monitor the colour changes at each step.
8.3.3 SEM and EDX Analyses

After the ISE study, each HAP disc was removed from the acid. They were then carbon-coated in order to be imaged with SEM and elementally analysed with EDX. SEM (FEI Inspect-F, USA) was operated at a high voltage of 5.00 kV and 5000 X magnification. Both SEM and EDX analyses were conducted in the middle area of the exposed window to avoid any interference from the nail varnish at the margin of the window.

8.3.4 $^{31}$P and $^{19}$F MAS-NMR Analyses

HAP powders were treated with silver compounds and acid challenged using procedures similar to those used in the ISE study.

1.0 g un-sintered HAP powders (CAPTAL ® 'R', Plasma Biotal Ltd, UK) were mixed with 2.5 mL of either DW (HAP + DW), 3.16 M AgNO₃ (HAP + AgNO₃), 3.16 M AgF (HAP + AgF), 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F (HAP + Ag[NH₃]₂F), or Silver Capsule of Riva Star (HAP + Riva-SC). Thereafter, the samples were collected after 1 min centrifugation (3000 rpm) (MICROSPIN 24S; Sorvall). Next, half of the collected samples were immersed in 5.0 mL demineralisation solution (pH 4.0) as used in the ISE study for 4 h, followed by 1 min centrifugation (3000 rpm) to prepare the acid challenged samples. All the collected samples were then put into a desiccator for 24 h for drying.

After desiccation, samples were analysed with $^{31}$P MAS-NMR and $^{19}$F MAS-NMR (600 MHz Bruker, Coventry, UK). Solid-state $^{31}$P MAS-NMR analysis was carried out using a 14.1 Tesla spectrometer at a Larmor frequency of 242.94 Mega-hertz (MHz) for a 16 min scan with a recycle delay of 1 min. Solid-state $^{19}$F MAS-NMR analysis was carried out using a 14.1 Tesla spectrometer at a Larmor frequency of 564.66 MHz for a 1 h scan with a recycle delay of 30 s. All scans were obtained under magic angle spinning conditions of 20 kHz.
8.4 Results

8.4.1 Ca\(^{2+}\) ISE Study

Fig. 8.4 shows a typical plot of Ca\(^{2+}\) release from a HAP disc of the DW treatment group. The Ca\(^{2+}\) release was linear with time, both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release was decreased following the DW treatment (Table 8.2). All three samples of the DW treatment group showed a similar linear Ca\(^{2+}\) release, both before and after treatment, and a similar reduction in the rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release following the treatments. Errors of gradients were calculated using SigmaPlot 10.0 (Systat Software, California, USA).

![Graph showing typical Ca\(^{2+}\) release of DW treatment group.]

Table 8.2 - The RCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\) before and after DW topical treatment of the Fig. 8.4.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>R(_{b}^{+/-})-SE (X 10(^{-3}) mM/h)</th>
<th>R(_{a}^{+/-})-SE (X 10(^{-3}) mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>10.83 ± 0.17</td>
<td>10.19 ± 0.16</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Fig. 8.5** shows a typical plot of Ca$^{2+}$ release from a HAP disc of the AgNO$_3$ treatment group. The Ca$^{2+}$ release was linear with time, both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release was decreased following the AgNO$_3$ treatment (**Table 8.3**). All three samples of the AgNO$_3$ treatment group showed a similar linear Ca$^{2+}$ release, both before and after treatment, and a similar reduction in the rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release following the treatments.

![Figure 8.5 - Typical Ca$^{2+}$ release of AgNO$_3$ treatment group.](image)

**Table 8.3 -** The RCL$_{HAP}$ before and after AgNO$_3$ topical treatment of the **Fig. 8.5**.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>$R_b$ +/- SE (X 10$^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>$R_a$ +/- SE (X 10$^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>7.26 ± 0.51</td>
<td>5.95 ± 0.45</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Fig. 8.6 shows a typical plot of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release from a HAP disc of the AgF treatment group. The Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was linear with time, both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was decreased following the AgF treatment (Table 8.4). All three samples of the AgF treatment group showed a similar linear Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release, both before and after treatment, and a similar reduction in the rate of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release following the treatments.

![Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of AgF treatment group.](image)

**Figure 8.6 – Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of AgF treatment group.**

**Table 8.4 - The RCL\textsubscript{HAP} before and after AgF topical treatment of the Fig. 8.6.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>( R_{b+}/\pm \text{SE} \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM/h} )</th>
<th>( R_{a+}/\pm \text{SE} \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM/h} )</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AgF Tx</td>
<td>7.25 ± 0.52</td>
<td>2.42 ± 0.15</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Fig. 8.7** shows a typical plot of Ca$^{2+}$ release from a HAP disc of the Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment group. The Ca$^{2+}$ release was linear with time, both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release was decreased following the Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment (**Table 8.5**). All three samples of the Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment group showed a similar linear Ca$^{2+}$ release, both before and after treatment, and a similar reduction in the rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release following the treatments.

**Figure 8.7 - Typical Ca$^{2+}$ release of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment group.**

**Table 8.5 - The RCL$_{HAP}$ before and after Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatment of the Fig. 8.7.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>$R_b$ +/- SE (X 10$^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>$R_a$ +/- SE (X 10$^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>7.56 ± 0.50</td>
<td>2.17 ± 0.31</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Fig. 8.8** shows a typical plot of Ca$^{2+}$ release from a HAP disc of the Riva-SC treatment group. The Ca$^{2+}$ release was linear with time, both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release was decreased following the Riva-SC treatment (**Table 8.6**). All three samples of the Riva-SC treatment group showed a similar linear Ca$^{2+}$ release, both before and after treatment, and a similar reduction in the rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release following the treatments.

![Graph showing Ca$^{2+}$ release over time](image)

**Figure 8.8** – Typical Ca$^{2+}$ release of Riva-SC treatment group.

**Table 8.6** - The RCL$\text{_{HAP}}$ before and after Riva-SC topical treatment of the **Fig. 8.8**.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>$R_{b+/SE}$ (X 10^{-3} mM/h)</th>
<th>$R_{a+/SE}$ (X 10^{-3} mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>14.76 ± 0.61</td>
<td>5.07 ± 0.36</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
8.4.1.1. Summary of the Ca\(^{2+}\) Release from the HAP Discs of Each Treatment Group

Table 8.7 shows the rates of calcium loss of HAP (RCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\)) before and after treatments, and the percentages reduction in the rates of calcium loss of HAP (PRCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\)) of every HAP disc in each treatment group. Every R\(_{\text{a}}\) (RCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\)) measured was significantly different (p < 0.05) from the R\(_{\text{b}}\) (RCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\)) of the same HAP disc sample.

The mean RCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\) before treatments were similar (≈ 0.010 mM/h), whereas, the mean RCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\) following treatments were different. The mean RCL\(_{\text{HAP}}\) following topical treatments with fluoride-containing silver compounds like AgF, Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(^2\)F and Riva-SC, were much lower than those following topical treatments with AgNO\(_3\) and DW.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx Group</th>
<th>HAP Disc</th>
<th>R(_{\text{b}})/-SE (X 10(^{-3}) mM/h)</th>
<th>R(_{\text{a}})/-SE (X 10(^{-3}) mM/h)</th>
<th>PRCL(_{\text{HAP}}) (%)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>12.32 ± 0.20</td>
<td>11.90 ± 0.28</td>
<td>3.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>10.83 ± 0.17</td>
<td>10.19 ± 0.16</td>
<td>5.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8.24 ± 0.20</td>
<td>7.61 ± 0.20</td>
<td>7.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>10.46 ± 1.19</td>
<td>9.90 ± 1.25</td>
<td>5.7 ± 1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO(_3) Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>11.58 ± 0.20</td>
<td>10.46 ± 0.50</td>
<td>9.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>12.70 ± 0.30</td>
<td>10.50 ± 0.60</td>
<td>17.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7.26 ± 0.51</td>
<td>5.95 ± 0.45</td>
<td>18.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>10.51 ± 1.66</td>
<td>8.97 ± 1.51</td>
<td>15.0 ± 2.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9.19 ± 0.52</td>
<td>2.85 ± 0.77</td>
<td>69.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>11.51 ± 0.60</td>
<td>2.16 ± 0.30</td>
<td>81.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7.25 ± 0.52</td>
<td>2.42 ± 0.15</td>
<td>66.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>9.32 ± 0.23</td>
<td>2.48 ± 0.20</td>
<td>72.3 ± 4.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ag[(\text{NH}_3)](^2)F Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>7.56 ± 0.50</td>
<td>2.17 ± 0.31</td>
<td>71.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>7.26 ± 0.50</td>
<td>1.62 ± 0.70</td>
<td>77.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>15.25 ± 0.50</td>
<td>6.07 ± 0.60</td>
<td>60.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>10.02 ± 2.62</td>
<td>3.29 ± 1.40</td>
<td>69.7 ± 5.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>10.04 ± 0.50</td>
<td>4.04 ± 0.30</td>
<td>61.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>19.34 ± 0.60</td>
<td>7.64 ± 0.20</td>
<td>60.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>14.76 ± 0.61</td>
<td>5.07 ± 0.36</td>
<td>65.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>14.83 ± 2.58</td>
<td>5.58 ± 1.11</td>
<td>62.4 ± 1.6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Fig. 8.9 shows the mean PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} of each treatment group. The mean PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} of AgF, Ag\textsubscript{[NH\textsubscript{3}]_2F} and Riva-SC treatment groups were much higher than that of AgNO\textsubscript{3} treatment group, while the mean PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} of DW treatment group was the lowest. There were no significant differences between the mean PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} of AgF, Ag\textsubscript{[NH\textsubscript{3}]_2F} and Riva-SC treatment groups.

Figure 8.9 – The mean PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking line between bars indicate significant differences at $p < 0.05$ between treatment groups.
8.4.2 Ag\(^+\) ISE study

The Ag\(^+\) release profiles of each treatment group were plotted from the mean activities of Ag\(^+\) released from the three HAP discs of each treatment group (Fig. 8.10). After re-immersion of HAP discs topically treated with AgNO\(_3\), AgF, Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F and Riva-SC into acids, all the mean activities of Ag\(^+\) in the solution increased rapidly from zero and then subsequently decreased continually.

Even though the Ag\(^+\) release profiles are not linear, the approximate rates of the changes in the mean Ag\(^+\) activities can be extrapolated by the slopes of the trendlines of initial increase and later decrease in Ag\(^+\) activities.

No Ag\(^+\) release was observed in the DW treatment group.

Figure 8.10 – The mean Ag\(^+\) release from HAP discs under pH 4.0 demineralisation before and after treatments with DW, AgNO\(_3\), AgF, Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F and Riva-SC.
Table 8.8 shows the mean initial rates (RI) of increase in the Ag⁺ activities and the mean later rates (RL) of decrease in the Ag⁺ activities following topical treatments with silver compounds. However, there were no significant differences in RI and RL between each treatment group (Fig. 8.11).

Table 8.8 – Mean RI and mean RL of the Ag⁺ release following each treatment.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx Group</th>
<th>Mean RI+/−SE (X 10⁻² mM/h)</th>
<th>Mean RL+/−SE (X 10⁻² mM/h)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>0.00 + 0.00</td>
<td>0.00 + 0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO₃ Tx</td>
<td>12.56 + 2.85</td>
<td>-0.12 ± 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF Tx</td>
<td>20.76 + 3.16</td>
<td>-0.16 ± 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td>19.01 ± 4.08</td>
<td>-0.24 ± 0.08</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>13.10 ± 8.09</td>
<td>-0.15 ± 0.04</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Figure 8.11 – (a) Mean RI and (b) mean RL of the Ag⁺ release of each treatment group.
8.4.2.1 Mean [Ag\(^+\)] during the post-treatment 4 h periods of Each Treatment Group

The mean [Ag\(^+\)] during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated HAP samples into acid ([Ag\(^+\)]\(_{4}\)) (Table 8.9) of each treatment group was calculated, in order to compare the effects of Ag\(^+\) in the acid on the demineralisation of the HAP discs.

**Fig. 8.12** shows the [Ag\(^+\)]\(_{4}\) of each treatment group. There were no significant differences between the [Ag\(^+\)]\(_{4}\) of AgNO\(_3\), AgF, Ag[NH\(_3\)]\(_2\)F and Riva-SC treatment groups.

**Table 8.9** – The mean [Ag\(^+\)] during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated HAP samples into acids ([Ag\(^+\)]\(_{4}\)) of each treatment group.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx Groups</th>
<th>[Ag(^+)](_{4}) (ppm)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>0.0 ± 0.0 X 10(^{-3}) mM 0.00 ± 0.00 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO(_3) Tx</td>
<td>5.7 ± 0.9 X 10(^{-3}) mM 0.61 ± 0.10 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF Tx</td>
<td>9.3 ± 1.6 X 10(^{-3}) mM 1.00 ± 0.17 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ag[NH(_3)](_2)F Tx</td>
<td>9.4 ± 1.6 X 10(^{-3}) mM 1.01 ± 0.17 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>8.1 ± 1.7 X 10(^{-3}) mM 0.87 ± 0.18 ppm</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Figure 8.12** – The [Ag\(^+\)]\(_{4}\) (ppm) of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors.
8.4.3 F⁻ ISE study

The F⁻ release profiles of each treatment group were plotted from the mean activities of F⁻ released from the three HAP discs of each treatment group (Fig. 8.13). After re-immersion of HAP discs topically treated with AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC into acids, there was a rapid increase in all the mean activities of F⁻ from zero, which slowed with time.

Even though the F⁻ release profiles are not linear, the approximate rates of the changes in the mean F⁻ activities can be extrapolated by the slopes of trendlines of initial increase and later increase in F⁻ activities.

No F⁻ release was observed in DW and AgNO₃ treatment groups.

Figure 8.13 - The mean F⁻ release from HAP discs under pH 4.0 demineralisation before and after treatments with DW, AgNO₃, AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC.
Table 8.10 shows the mean $R_I$ and the mean $R_L$ of increase in the F$^-$ activities following silver compounds topical treatments. The mean $R_I$ of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment group was significantly faster than the mean $R_I$ of AgF treatment group, but the mean $R_L$ of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment group was significantly slower than the mean $R_L$ of AgF treatment group. The mean $R_I$ and $R_L$ of Riva-SC treatment group were not significantly different from other treatment groups (Fig. 8.14).

Table 8.10 – Mean $R_I$ and mean $R_L$ of the F$^-$ release following each treatment.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx Group</th>
<th>Mean $R_I$+/-SE (X 10$^{-2}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>Mean $R_L$+/-SE (X 10$^{-2}$ mM/h)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>0.00 + 0.00</td>
<td>0.00 + 0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>0.00 + 0.00</td>
<td>0.00 + 0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF Tx</td>
<td>8.49 + 1.96</td>
<td>0.33 + 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>25.59 + 6.63</td>
<td>0.08 + 0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>16.06 + 9.60</td>
<td>0.18 + 0.08</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Figure 8.14 – (a) Mean $R_I$ and (b) mean $R_L$ of the F$^-$ release of each treatment group.
8.4.3.1 Mean [F⁻] during the post-treatment 4 h periods of Each Treatment Group

The mean [F⁻] during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated HAP samples into acid ([F⁻]₄h) (Table 8.11) of each treatment group was calculated, in order to compare the effects of F⁻ in the acid on the demineralisation of the HAP discs.

Fig. 8.15 shows the [F⁻]₄h of each treatment group. The [F⁻]₄h of Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC treatment groups were higher than the [F⁻]₄h of AgF treatment group. There was no significant difference between the [F⁻]₄h of Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC treatment groups.

Table 8.11 – The mean [F⁻] during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated HAP samples into acids ([F⁻]₄h) of each treatment group.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx Groups</th>
<th>[F⁻]₄h</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>0.0 ± 0.0 X 10⁻³ mM 0.00 ± 0.00 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO₃ Tx</td>
<td>0.0 ± 0.0 X 10⁻³ mM 0.00 ± 0.00 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF Tx</td>
<td>9.5 ± 0.5 X 10⁻³ mM 0.18 ± 0.01 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td>16.3 ± 1.6 X 10⁻³ mM 0.31 ± 0.03 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>16.8 ± 1.2 X 10⁻³ mM 0.32 ± 0.02 ppm</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Figure 8.15 - The [F⁻]₄h (ppm) of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups.
8.4.4 Digital Photographs

Following topical treatments with AgNO₃, AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC, yellow staining was observed on the HAP disc surfaces, which then turned to black staining after further 4 h demineralisation (Fig. 8.16). No staining was observed on the HAP discs topically treated with DW.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>After the first 4 h demin.</th>
<th>After topical treatment</th>
<th>After further 4 h demin.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO₃ Tx</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF Tx</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Figure 8.16** – Digital photographs of HAP discs following different treatments in the ISE study.
8.4.5 SEM Images Analysis

**Fig. 8.17a ~ e** shows typical SEM images of HAP disc surfaces topically treated with application agents after demineralisation. The HAP disc surfaces treated with AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F or Riva-SC were less uneven than that treated with AgNO₃, while the HAP disc surfaces treated with DW were the most uneven and porous.

There were numerous cubic particles (~ 3 μm) deposited on HAP disc surfaces topically treated with silver compounds (**Fig. 8.17b ~ e**). Further, there were granular particles (~ 1 μm) deposited on HAP disc surfaces topically treated with AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F or Riva-SC (**Fig. 8.17c, d, and e**).

All particles deposited on the HAP disc surfaces were of similar sizes and were distributed evenly across the surfaces. Further, the HAP disc surfaces treated with AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F or Riva-SC (**Fig. 8.17c, d, and e**) were more densely covered by the deposited particles than that treated with AgNO₃ (**Fig. 8.17b**) due to the additional deposition of granular particles.
Figure 8.17 - Typical SEM images (5.00 kV, 5000 X) of HAP discs in treatment groups of (a) DW, (b) AgNO₃, (c) AgF, (d) Ag[NH₃]₂F and (e) Riva-SC, after the ISE study.
8.4.6 EDX Analysis

EDX analysis showed that elemental Ag (Fig. 8.18) was present on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with AgNO₃, AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC after demineralisation. The mean atomic percentage of Ag detected in AgF treatment group was higher than that of the Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment group, both of which were higher than 3.16 M AgNO₃ treatment group. There were no significant differences between the mean atomic Ag % of Riva-SC and other treatment groups.

No Ag was detected on the HAP surfaces topically treated with DW.

Figure 8.18 – The mean atomic percentage of Ag of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups.
Elemental F (Fig. 8.19) was present on the HAP surfaces topically treated with AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC after demineralisation. The mean percentage of F detected in the treatment group of AgF was slightly higher than those detected in the Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC treatment groups. However, there were no significant differences between the mean atomic F % of these treatment groups.

No F was detected on the HAP surfaces topically treated with DW and AgNO₃.

Figure 8.19 – The mean atomic percentage of F of each treatment group. Error bars show the standard errors.
8.4.7 \(^{31}\)P MAS-NMR Analysis

The \(^{31}\)P MAS-NMR spectra (Fig. 8.20) showed that chemical shift peaks of HAP (2.9 ppm) and \(\text{Ag}_3\text{PO}_4\) (28.8 ppm) were detected in HAP powders mixed with AgNO\(_3\), AgF, Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F or Riva-SC. Furthermore, after acid challenge, the proportions of \(\text{Ag}_3\text{PO}_4\) in all silver compound treatment groups increased, whereas the proportions of HAP decreased.

![Figure 8.20 - \(^{31}\)P MAS–NMR spectra of each treatment group before and after pH 4.0 acid challenge.](image-url)
8.4.8 $^{19}$F MAS-NMR Analysis

The $^{19}$F MAS-NMR spectra (Fig. 8.21) showed that no fluoride compounds were detected in HAP powders mixed with DW or AgNO$_3$. However, both CaF$_2$ ($-109.1$ ppm) and FHA (fluorohydroxyapatite) ($-106.6$ ppm) were detected in HAP powders mixed with AgF, Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F or Riva-SC. As FHA has a relatively lower content of fluoride than FAP, its chemical shift ($-106.6$ ppm) is at the upfield side of the FAP ($-103.6$ ppm).

Figure 8.21 – $^{19}$F MAS–NMR spectra of each treatment group before and after pH 4.0 acid challenge. (* = sidebands)
As the chemical shift peaks of CaF$_2$ and FHA were too close and overlapped with each other, deconvolution was required using DmFit (France) (Section 5.6). Fig. 8.22 ~ Fig. 8.24 show that, after the acid challenge, the proportions of FHA in the HAP powders mixed with AgF, Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC increased, whereas the proportions of CaF$_2$ decreased.

*Figure 8.22 - Deconvoluted $^{19}$F spectra of (a) HAP + AgF and (b) pH 4.0 HAP + AgF.*
Figure 8.23 – Deconvoluted $^{19}\text{F}$ spectra of (a) HAP + Ag$[^{3}\text{NH}]_{2} ^{19}\text{F}$ and (b) pH 4.0 HAP + Ag$[^{3}\text{NH}]_{2} ^{19}\text{F}$. 
Figure 8.24 – Deconvoluted $^{19}$F spectra of (a) HAP + Riva-SC and (b) pH 4.0 HAP + Riva-SC.
Chapter 9 DISCUSSION OF THE EFFECTS OF TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION OF HAP DISCS AND PROPOSED MODELS FOR MECHANISMS

The linear \( \text{Ca}^{2+} \) release with time from demineralising HAP discs under acid challenge (Fig. 8.4 ~ Fig. 8.8) observed in the ISE study was consistent with previously reported results of mineral loss from HAP and enamel during demineralisation using real-time scanning microradiography (SMR) (Anderson et al., 1998; Anderson et al., 2004b; Hassanali et al., 2017). However, SMR could not be used in this study as it does not allow topical treatments of specimens during the experiment due to the time-consuming sample preparation procedure (Section 6.1).

After demineralisation, uneven HAP disc surfaces were observed (Fig. 8.17a ~ e), which demonstrated the aggressive destruction from the acid attack. The surface roughness of HAP discs has been reported to increase after pH 4.0 demineralisation using non-contact optical profilometry (Baysan and Anderson, 2009).
9.1 Effects of Topical Treatment with De-ionised Water on Demineralisation of HAP Discs

In the ISE study, following the topical treatment with de-ionised water (DW) on HAP discs, a small inhibitory efficacy (5.7±1.2 %) was observed (Fig. 8.9). This might be due to the removal of softened HAP surfaces during the topical applications using a micro-brush, which exposed the intact HAP layers beneath. Further, the physical forces of the topical treatment may smooth the HAP surfaces. Therefore, after re-immersion of the topically treated HAP discs back into acid, the demineralisation was initiated on an intact and smoothened HAP surface, which led to a slower Ca$^{2+}$ release from the demineralising HAP discs. It has been suggested that eroded dental surfaces are more vulnerable to physical abrasion effects than sound dental surfaces (Shellis and Addy, 2014). Therefore, demineralisation of HAP discs can be slightly inhibited by the abrasion effects following using a micro-brush during the topical treatments.

In this study, the inhibitory efficacy of the topical treatments was based on the ratios between the slope values of “4 h” Ca$^{2+}$ release trend-lines before and after the treatments. However, the ratios between the slope values of shorter time periods (e.g. 2 h or 3 h) for Ca$^{2+}$ release trend-lines before and after the treatments may be different from the present result, leading to different inhibitory efficacy. Therefore, the time period chosen for the Ca$^{2+}$ release can affect the interpretation of the results, which may lead to different conclusions. This is a limitation of the current study.
9.2 Effects of Topical Treatment with AgNO₃ on Demineralisation of HAP Discs and Proposed Mechanistic Models

9.2.1 Following Topical Treatment with AgNO₃

In the ISE study, immediately following topical treatment with AgNO₃ on HAP discs, yellow staining was observed on the HAP disc surfaces (Fig. 8.16), which indicated the formation of yellow Ag₃PO₄ (Lewis, 1920). This was consistent with the formation of Ag₃PO₄ in the HAP powders mixed with AgNO₃, detected with ³¹P MAS-NMR (Fig. 8.20). It has been proposed that Ag⁺ can substitute for Ca²⁺ in the HAP lattice (Ling Feng et al., 1998; Singh et al., 2011) (Section 3.2). Therefore, some Ag⁺ substituted HAP could also be formed following the topical treatment with AgNO₃. This is shown schematically in Fig. 9.1.

![Figure 9.1 – Schematic representation of an HAP disc topically treated with AgNO₃. Ag₃PO₄ is formed on the HAP disc surface and some Ca²⁺ in the HAP disc is substituted by Ag⁺.](image)

9.2.2 After Re-immersion of HAP Discs Topically Treated with AgNO₃ into Acid

After re-immersing the HAP discs topically treated with AgNO₃ back into acid, the ISE data showed that there was a small immediate reduction by 15.0±2.7 % in the rate of Ca²⁺ release (Fig. 8.5 and Fig. 8.9). ³¹P MAS-NMR spectra showed that in the HAP powders treated with AgNO₃, after acid challenge, the proportion of Ag₃PO₄ increased and the proportion of HAP decreased (Fig. 8.20). This may
be due to the acidic demineralisation of HAP by the acid, providing more PO$_4^{3-}$ for further Ag$_3$PO$_4$ formation, which indicates that Ag$_3$PO$_4$ has higher acid-resistance than HAP. Therefore, the inhibition of Ca$^{2+}$ release from demineralising HAP discs following the topical treatment with AgNO$_3$ may be associated with the formation of a “protective barrier” composed of Ag$_3$PO$_4$. This experimental result confirmed the theoretical inhibitory mechanism of AgNO$_3$ on HAP demineralisation, proposed by Yamaga et al. (1972) (Section 3.2). Gradually, yellow Ag$_3$PO$_4$ on the treated HAP discs was reduced to black metallic silver due to the photosensitivity of Ag$^+$, as described by Liu et al. (2012c). Even though foil was used in the present study to limit the exposure to light, it has been reported that Ag$_3$PO$_4$ will be reduced to metallic silver in both light and dark conditions (Lou et al., 2011).

However, the mean PRCL$_{HAP}$ following topical treatment with AgNO$_3$ (15.0±2.7 %) is not much higher than that following topical treatment with DW (5.7±1.2 %) (Fig. 8.9), implying that the inhibitory efficacy of the topical treatment with AgNO$_3$ is low. The low inhibitory efficacy of the topical treatment may be due to the formation of Ag$^+$ substituted HAP, which has been proposed to be more susceptible to acid challenge than HAP (Singh et al., 2011).

The Ag$^+$ released from the HAP discs topically treated with AgNO$_3$ was detected with Ag$^+$ ISEs after the re-immersion of the HAP discs back into acid (Fig. 8.10). The initial increase in the mean Ag$^+$ activity could result from the release of Ag$^+$ loosely attached to the HAP disc surfaces, whereas, the later decrease in the mean Ag$^+$ activity could result from the chemical reduction of Ag$^+$. These very small metallic silver particles will be dispersed in the solution due to the agitation of the magnetic stirrer.

Fig. 9.2a shows that, after re-immersing the HAP discs topically treated with AgNO$_3$ back into acid, Ag$^+$ loosely attached to the HAP disc surfaces is released into solution. Further, the Ag$_3$PO$_4$ protective barrier protects the HAP disc from demineralisation. Fig. 9.2b shows that some Ag$^+$ in the solution and some Ag$_3$PO$_4$ on the HAP disc surface are gradually reduced to black metallic silver. Further, the metallic silver reduced from the Ag$^+$ in the solution will be dispersed in the solution.
9.2.3 After Removal of HAP Discs Topically Treated with AgNO₃ from Acid

After removing the HAP discs topically treated with AgNO₃ from acid, SEM images showed that the HAP disc surfaces were less uneven than the surfaces
topically treated with DW (Fig. 8.17a and b), which demonstrated the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with AgNO₃. Deeper lesions observed on the HAP disc surfaces may be due to the loss of Ag⁺ substituted HAP, which has a higher susceptibility to acidic demineralisation.

Cubic particles were observed on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with AgNO₃ (Fig. 8.17b). These cubic particles may be Ag₃PO₄ or metallic silver, as a previous study has reported that yellow cubic Ag₃PO₄ were found in the HAP powders mixed with AgNO₃, which gradually reduced to black cubic metallic silver (Lou et al., 2011). In the present study, as only black staining was observed on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with AgNO₃ (Fig. 8.16), most of the Ag₃PO₄ has been reduced to metallic silver over the post-treatment 4 h demineralisation period.

Fig. 8.5 shows that, during the post-treatment 4 h demineralisation period, the inhibited Ca²⁺ release from demineralising HAP disc following the topical treatment with AgNO₃ was linear with time, even though Ag₃PO₄ in the protective barrier was gradually reduced to metallic silver. This indicates that the inhibitory efficacy of the topical treatment with AgNO₃ was not subsequently affected by the chemical reduction of Ag₃PO₄ in the protective barrier to metallic silver. Therefore, the metallic silver particles reduced from Ag₃PO₄ particles continued to play the same protective role as the Ag₃PO₄ particles in the protective barrier during demineralisation.

Fig. 9.3 shows that after removing the HAP discs topically treated with AgNO₃ from acid, deeper lesions developed in the Ag⁺ substituted HAP are observed, and therefore the demineralised HAP disc surface is very uneven. Further, all the Ag₃PO₄ on the HAP disc surfaces is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining. The HAP disc surface covered by the metallic silver is protected during the demineralisation.
9.2.4 Analysis of the Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatment with AgNO₃ on Demineralisation of HAP Discs

As discussed in topical treatment with DW (Section 9.1), demineralisation of HAP discs can be inhibited merely by the abrasion effects from using a micro-brush during the topical treatment (PRCL_{HAP} = 5.7±1.2 %). Therefore, the inhibitory efficacy (PRCL_{HAP} = 15.0±2.7 %) observed following the topical treatment with AgNO₃ on the demineralisation of HAP discs was partially be attributed to the abrasion effects of the micro-brush.

Figure 9.3 – Schematic representation of an HAP topically treated with AgNO₃ after 4 h demineralisation. Deeper lesions are developed in the Ag⁺ substituted HAP, therefore an uneven demineralised HAP disc surface is observed. Further, all the Ag₃PO₄ is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining.

Figure 9.4 – The effects of topical treatment influencing the inhibitory efficacy.
The rest of the inhibitory efficacy should be associated with the effects of topically applied AgNO₃. The effects of topically applied AgNO₃ include the effects of the reaction products deposited on the HAP disc surfaces and the effects of the ions released from the topically treated HAP discs (Fig. 9.4). As discussed previously (Section 9.2.2), Ag₃PO₄ particles were formed as a protective barrier on the HAP discs topically treated with AgNO₃, which contributed to the inhibitory efficacy. Whereas, as the Ag⁺ in the solution released from the topically treated HAP discs accelerated the demineralisation due to the formation of Ag⁺ substituted HAP (Singh et al., 2011), the inhibitory efficacy was compromised. However, as the [Ag⁺]₄th in the solution was only 0.61±0.10 ppm (Table 8.9), the accelerating effect of Ag⁺ should be small. According to the log-linear dose-response of Ag⁺ on demineralisation of enamel reported in Chapter 7 (Fig. 7.4), the effect of the Ag⁺ at 0.61 ppm is negligible.

9.2.5 Conclusions

In conclusion, Sections 9.2.1, 9.2.2, 9.2.3 and 9.2.4 show that the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with AgNO₃ on demineralisation of HAP discs is associated with the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag₃PO₄ (gradually reduced to metallic silver), and the abrasion effects of topical treatment.
9.3 Effects of Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on Demineralisation of HAP Discs and Proposed Mechanistic Models

9.3.1 Following Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F

In the ISE study, immediately following topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on HAP discs, yellow staining was observed on the HAP disc surfaces (Fig. 8.16), which indicated the formation of yellow Ag$_3$PO$_4$ (Lewis, 1920). This was consistent with the formation of Ag$_3$PO$_4$ in the HAP powders mixed with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F detected with $^{31}$P MAS-NMR (Fig. 8.20). Further, the formation of CaF$_2$ and fluorohydroxyapatite (FHA) in the HAP powders mixed with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F was also detected with $^{19}$F MAS-NMR (Fig. 8.21). Therefore, the Ca$^{2+}$ lost from HAP discs due to the formation of Ag$^+$ substituted HAP (Ling Feng et al., 1998; Singh et al., 2011) will be preserved as CaF$_2$, and unstable Ag$^+$ substituted HAP will be replaced by more stable FHA (Robinson, 2009). Thus, HAP discs topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F should be better protected against demineralisation than those topically treated with AgNO$_3$ due to the additional CaF$_2$ deposits covering the HAP disc surfaces, and, the formation of acid-resistant FHA. This is shown schematically in Fig 9.5.

![Figure 9.5](image-url)

*Figure 9.5 – Schematic representation of an HAP disc topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F. Ag$_3$PO$_4$, CaF$_2$ and FHA are formed on the HAP disc surface.*
9.3.2 After Re-immersion of HAP Discs Topically Treated with AgF, and Ag[NH₃]₂F into Acid

After re-immersing the HAP discs topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F back into acid, the ISE data showed that there was an immediate reduction in the rate of Ca²⁺ release (Fig. 8.6 and Fig. 8.7). The mean PRCLₜₜ of the AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups (72.3±4.5 % and 69.7±5.1 %) were much higher than that of the AgNO₃ treatment group (15.0±2.7 %) (Fig. 8.9), showing that the inhibitory efficacy of F⁻ was greater than that of Ag⁺.

³¹P MAS-NMR spectra showed that in the HAP powders mixed with AgF, and Ag[NH₃]₂F, the proportions of Ag₃PO₄ increased, and the proportions of HAP decreased after acid challenge (Fig. 8.20). This indicates that the Ag₃PO₄ has higher acid-resistant than HAP (as discussed in Section 9.2.2). Furthermore, ¹⁹F MAS-NMR spectra showed that in the HAP powders mixed with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F, the proportions of CaF₂ decreased and the proportions of FHA increased after acid challenge (Fig. 8.22 and Fig. 8.23). This may be due to the acidic demineralisation of CaF₂, providing F⁻ for further formation of FHA. Both CaF₂ and FHA have been proposed to be able to inhibit the demineralisation of HAP (Rosin-Grette et al., 2013; ten Cate, 1997; White and Nancollas, 1990) (Section 2.4). Therefore, the inhibition of Ca²⁺ release from demineralising HAP discs following the topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F could be associated with the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag₃PO₄, CaF₂ and FHA. This experimental result confirmed the theoretical inhibitory mechanism of Ag[NH₃]₂F on HAP demineralisation, proposed by Yamaga et al. (1972) (Section 3.4.3). Gradually, yellow Ag₃PO₄ on the treated HAP discs was reduced to black metallic silver due to the photosensitivity of Ag⁺ (Liu et al., 2012c).

The Ag⁺ released from the HAP discs topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F was detected with Ag⁺ ISEs after the re-immersion of the HAP discs back into acid (Fig. 8.10). As mentioned in AgNO₃ treatment group (Section 9.2.2), the initial increase in the mean Ag⁺ activity could result from the release of Ag⁺ loosely attached to the HAP disc surfaces, whereas, the later decrease in the mean Ag⁺ activity could result from chemical reduction of Ag⁺. These very small metallic
silver particles will be dispersed in the solution due to the agitation of the magnetic stirrer.

**Fig. 8.11a and b** shows that there were no significant differences in the initial increase rate of Ag⁺ activities and the later decrease rate of Ag⁺ activities between AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups. This indicates the hindrance of the chemical reduction of Ag⁺ by the formation of Ag[NH₃]₂⁺ following the Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment (Liu et al., 2012b) was not obvious. Similar Ag⁺ release profiles explain why there were no significant differences between the [Ag⁺]₄₄ of AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups (**Fig. 8.12**). Therefore, the effects of Ag⁺ in the solution on both AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F topically treated HAP discs should be similar.

The F⁻ released from the HAP discs topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F was detected with F⁻ ISEs after the re-immersion of the HAP discs back into acid (**Fig. 8.13**). The initial increase in the mean F⁻ activity could result from the release of F⁻ loosely attached to the HAP disc surfaces (Arends and Christoffersen, 1990; Dijkman et al., 1982), whereas, the later increase in the mean F⁻ activity could result from the slow dissolution of CaF₂-like globules (Buzalaf et al., 2011; White and Nancollas, 1990; Rolla, 1988). It has been proposed that CaF₂-like globule (CaF₂ with the adsorption of HPO₄²⁻), which has lower solubility than pure CaF₂, can act as a pH-driven F⁻ reservoir, favouring the formation of FHA (ten Cate, 2013; Vogel, 2011) (Section 2.4).

**Fig. 8.14a and b** shows that the initial increase rate of F⁻ activity following Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment was significantly faster than that following AgF topical treatment. However, the later increase rate of F⁻ activity following Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatments was significantly slower than that following AgF topical treatment. This may be due to that the proportion of CaF₂ without the adsorption of HPO₄²⁻, which has higher solubility, formed following Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment was higher than that following AgF topical treatment, leading to faster initial F⁻ release. Further, the proportion of CaF₂ with the adsorption of HPO₄²⁻ (CaF₂-like globule) formed following Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment was lower than that following AgF topical treatment, leading slower later F⁻ release. The much faster initial F⁻ release following Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment resulted in significantly higher [F⁻]₄₄ detected following Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment than
that following AgF topical treatment (Fig. 8.15). Therefore, the effects of F– in the solution on Ag[NH₃]₂F topically treated HAP discs should be higher than those on AgF topically treated HAP discs. Less CaF₂-like globules formed following Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment may be due to the interference of the adsorption of HPO₄²⁻ around CaF₂ surfaces. The most likely interference factor could be the ammonium (NH₄⁺) dissolved from the Ag[NH₃]₂F. However, further studies are required to confirm the extrapolation.

Fig. 9.6a shows that, after re-immersing the HAP discs topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F back into acid, both Ag⁺ and F– loosely attached to HAP disc surface are released into solution. Further, the protective barrier composed of Ag₃PO₄, CaF₂ and FHA protects the HAP disc from demineralisation. Fig. 9.6b shows that some Ag⁺ in the solution and some Ag₃PO₄ on the HAP disc surface are gradually reduced to metallic silver. Further, some CaF₂ on the HAP disc surface is gradually dissolved, providing F– for further formation of FHA.
Figure 9.6 - Schematic representation of an HAP disc topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₃F following re-immersion back into acid. a) Both Ag⁺ and F⁻ loosely attached to HAP disc surfaces are released into solution. b) Gradually, some Ag₃PO₄ on the HAP disc surface and some Ag⁺ in the solution are reduced to metallic silver, and some CaF₂ on the HAP disc surface is dissolved, providing F⁻ for further formation of FHA.
9.3.3 After Removal of HAP Discs Topically Treated with AgF, and Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F from Acid

After removing the HAP discs topically treated with AgF and Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F from acid, SEM images showed that the HAP disc surfaces were less uneven than those topically treated with AgNO\(_3\) (Fig. 8.17b ~ d), which demonstrated that the inhibitory efficacy of F\(^-\) was greater than that of Ag\(^+\).

Cubic and granular particles were observed on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with AgF and Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F (Fig. 8.17c and 8.17d). As only black staining was observed on the HAP disc surfaces (Fig. 8.16), the cubic particles were mostly cubic metallic silver reduced from Ag\(_3\)PO\(_4\) (as discussed in Section 9.2.3). On the other hand, the granular particles should be CaF\(_2\)-like globules (Rolla and Saxegaard, 1990; Buzalaf et al., 2011) (Section 2.4). A previous study also reported that cubic metallic silver and CaF\(_2\)-like globules were found in the HAP powders (2.5 mg) mixed with Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F (0.5 mL) (Lou et al., 2011). However, they did not find Ag\(_3\)PO\(_4\) following mixing with Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F. This may be due to higher amounts of the HAP powder (1.0 g) and the Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F (2.5 mL) used in this study, leading to more formation of Ag\(_3\)PO\(_4\). Further, they identified CaF\(_2\)-like globules which disappeared after water rinsing. However, as no rinsing procedure was conducted after the topical treatment in the present study, CaF\(_2\)-like globules were observed on the HAP disc surfaces.

The mean atomic percentage of Ag detected on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with AgF was significantly higher than that of AgNO\(_3\) (Fig. 8.18). This indicates that the participation of F\(^-\) increased the formation of silver compounds deposited on the surfaces. A previous study found that as the formation of CaF\(_2\) requires slight dissolution of enamel, it results in the PO\(_4^3^-\) release from the dissociation of enamel mineral (mainly HAP) (Mohammed et al., 2013). Therefore, in the present study, as CaF\(_2\) was formed following topical treatments with AgF (Fig. 8.21), PO\(_4^3^-\) released from the dissociation of HAP discs led to more formation of Ag\(_3\)PO\(_4\) on the surfaces. The mean atomic percentage of Ag detected on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F was
significantly lower than that of AgF (Fig. 8.18), which may be due to that Ag₃PO₄ can be dissolved in ammonium (Firsching, 1961) (Section 3.4.3).

The mean atomic percentages of F detected on the HAP discs topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F were small (< 2 %) (Fig. 8.19). This indicates that most of the CaF₂ was dissolved during the post-treatment 4 h demineralisation period. The mean atomic percentage of F detected on the HAP discs topically treated with AgF was slightly higher than that of Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment group (Fig. 8.19). The lower mean atomic percentages of F detected on the Ag[NH₃]₂F topically treated HAP discs should be due to the faster initial F⁻ release (Fig. 8.14a), as discussed in Section 9.3.2.

Fig. 8.6 and Fig. 8.7 show that, during the post-treatment 4 h demineralisation period, the inhibited Ca²⁺ release from demineralising HAP disc following the topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F was linear with time, even though Ag₃PO₄ in the protective barrier was gradually reduced to metallic silver and the CaF₂ in the protective barrier was gradually dissolved. This indicates that the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with these fluoride-containing silver compounds was not subsequently affected by the chemical reduction of Ag₃PO₄ to metallic silver and the dissolution of CaF₂. As mentioned in Section 9.2.3, the metallic silver particles reduced from Ag₃PO₄ particles continue to play the same protective role as the Ag₃PO₄ particles in the protective barrier. Therefore, the further FHA formation due to the supply of F⁻ from CaF₂ dissolution should compensate for the protective effect lost from the dissolution of CaF₂ in the protective barrier.

Fig. 9.7 shows that after removing the HAP discs topically treated with AgF, or Ag[NH₃]₂F from acid, all the Ag₃PO₄ on the HAP disc is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining. Further, most of the CaF₂ is dissolved, which favours further formation of FHA. The HAP disc surface covered by the metallic silver, CaF₂ and FHA is protected during the demineralisation.
Figure 9.7 - Schematic representation of an HAP topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F after 4 h demineralisation. All the Ag₃PO₄ is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining and most of the CaF₂ is dissolved which favours further formation of FHA.

9.3.4 Analysis of the Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F on Demineralisation of HAP Discs

As discussed in Section 9.2.4, the inhibitory efficacy of the topical treatment on demineralisation of HAP discs can be influenced by the abrasion effects from using a micro-brush during the topical treatment and the effects of topical application agent (Fig. 9.4). Therefore, the abrasion effects of the topical treatment (PRCL<sub>HAP</sub> = 5.7±1.2 %) contributed to the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with AgF (PRCL<sub>HAP</sub> = 72.3±4.5 %) and Ag[NH₃]₂F (PRCL<sub>HAP</sub> = 69.7±5.1 %).

The effects of topical application agent include the effects of the reaction products deposited on the HAP disc surfaces and the effects of the ions released from the topically treated HAP discs (Fig. 9.4). Therefore, the protective barrier, composed of Ag₃PO₄, CaF₂ and FHA, formed on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (Section 9.3.2) also contributed to the inhibitory efficacy.

After re-immersing the treated HAP discs back into acids, both Ag<sup>+</sup> and F<sup>-</sup> were released (Fig. 8.10 and Fig. 8.13). Ag<sup>+</sup> in solution accelerates the demineralisation of HAP (Singh et al., 2011). According to the log-linear dose-response of Ag<sup>+</sup> on demineralisation of enamel (Fig. 7.4), the effects of the Ag<sup>+</sup> at 1.00 ppm, [Ag<sup>+</sup>]<sub>4h</sub> of AgF, and 1.01 ppm, [Ag<sup>+</sup>]<sub>4h</sub> of Ag[NH₃]₂F (Table 8.9), will accelerate the demineralisation both by 1.2 % (PRML<sub>enamel</sub>). On the other hand, F<sup>-</sup> in solution inhibits the demineralisation of HAP (White and Nancollas, 1990).
According to the log-linear dose-response of F\textsuperscript{-} on demineralisation of enamel (Fig. 6.7b) (Mohammed et al., 2014a), the effects of the F\textsuperscript{-} at 0.18 ppm, [F\textsuperscript{-}]\textsubscript{4h} of AgF, and 0.31 ppm, [F\textsuperscript{-}]\textsubscript{4h} of Ag[NH\textsubscript{3}]\textsubscript{2}F (Table 8.11), will inhibit the demineralisation by 22.9 % and 28.9 % (PRML\textsubscript{enamel}), respectively.

Even though the inhibitory efficacy (PRML\textsubscript{enamel}) resulting from the F\textsuperscript{-} in solution following AgF topical treatment is lower than that following Ag[NH\textsubscript{3}]\textsubscript{2}F topical treatment, the PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} of topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH\textsubscript{3}]\textsubscript{2}F were similar (Fig. 8.9). Therefore, the inhibitory efficacy from the protective barrier formed on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with AgF was higher than that formed on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with Ag[NH\textsubscript{3}]\textsubscript{2}F. This is consistent with higher amounts of silver and fluoride compounds detected on the AgF topically treated HAP discs (Fig. 8.18 and Fig. 8.19).

9.3.5 Conclusions

In conclusion, Sections 9.3.1, 9.3.2, 9.3.3 and 9.3.4 show that the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH\textsubscript{3}]\textsubscript{2}F on demineralisation of HAP discs is associated with the release of F\textsuperscript{-} from the topically treated HAP discs, the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag\textsubscript{3}PO\textsubscript{4}, CaF\textsubscript{2} and FHA, and, the abrasion effects of topical treatments.
9.4 Difference Between the Effects of Topical Treatments with Riva-SC and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on Demineralisation of HAP Discs

The effects of topical treatment with Riva-SC (3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, Silver Capsule of Riva Star SDI Ltd, Australia) on demineralisation of HAP discs were similar to those of laboratory-prepared (3.16 M) Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Fig. 8.7 ~ Fig. 8.24). This suggests that they have the same inhibitory effects on the demineralisation of HAP discs, and therefore, the same mechanisms (Fig. 9.5 ~ Fig. 9.7).

However, the rates of F⁻ release from the HAP discs topically treated with Riva-SC, and the mean atomic percentages of Ag detected on the HAP disc surfaces topically treated with Riva-SC were not significantly different from other treatment groups like the laboratory-prepared (3.16 M) Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F due to the high standard errors (Fig. 8.14 and Fig. 8.18). This may be due to that the composition of each Silver Capsule of Riva Star used in the study was not consistent. Therefore, a higher sample size is required to show the statistical differences. According to the SDS of the silver capsules of the Riva Star (SDI, 2016b), they contain 35 ~ 40 wt% AgF and 15 ~ 20 wt% ammonia.
9.5 Conclusions

In conclusion, the demineralisation inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgNO₃ on HAP discs is associated with the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag₃PO₄, and the abrasion effects of the topical treatment (see Fig. 9.4). Whereas, the demineralisation inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F on HAP discs is associated with F⁻ released from the topically treated HAP discs, the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag₃PO₄, CaF₂ and FHA, and the abrasion effects of topical treatments.

The effects of topical treatment with Silver Capsule of Riva Star (3.16 M SDF, SDI Ltd, Australia) on demineralisation of HAP discs are similar to those of laboratory-prepared 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F.
Chapter 10 DOSE-RESPONSE EFFECTS OF TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH DIFFERENT CONCENTRATIONS OF SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION OF HUMAN ENAMEL

10.1 Introduction

Even though numerous clinical trials have demonstrated the cariostatic efficacy of treatments with these silver compounds (Craig et al., 1987; Green, 1989; Miller, 1905; Milgrom et al., 2018) (Chapter 3), the inhibitory mechanisms of topical treatments with AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F on demineralisation of human enamel still remain obscure.

Today, Ag[NH₃]₂F is one of the most popular topically applied silver compounds used in clinical practice and has been reported to prevent and arrest dental caries in many clinical trials (Horst et al., 2016). Commercial Ag[NH₃]₂F products containing different concentrations are available on the market (Fung et al., 2013), with 38 wt% (2.36 M) the most commonly used and 50.9 wt% (3.16 M) the highest (Horst et al., 2016; SDI, 2016b). Several studies have shown that treatment with 38 wt% (2.36 M) Ag[NH₃]₂F is more effective than 12 wt% (0.75 M) Ag[NH₃]₂F in arresting dental caries (Fung et al., 2016; Fung et al., 2018; Yee et al., 2009). However, detailed dose-response effects of a range of topical treatments with silver compounds, including AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F, on the demineralisation of human enamel have not been carried out.
10.2 Aims

The inhibitory mechanisms of AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F, on demineralisation of HAP discs have been discussed in Chapter 9. However, HAP discs and human enamel are different in composition and structure (Section 1.3). Therefore, the first aim of this chapter was to understand the inhibitory mechanisms of AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatments on demineralisation of human enamel. This was achieved by investigating the effects of topical treatments with AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F on demineralisation of human enamel, using; Ca²⁺, Ag⁺ and F⁻ ion selective electrodes (ISEs), digital camera, scanning electron microscopy (SEM), energy dispersive X-ray analysis (EDX), ³¹P and ¹⁹F MAS-NMR, and Knoop micro-hardness tester.

The second aim was to investigate the dose-response effects of topical treatments with silver compounds on the demineralisation of human enamel. This was achieved by investigating the effects of topical treatments with 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M of AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F on demineralisation of human enamel, also using the techniques mentioned above.

The third aim was to compare the inhibitory efficacy and the effects of topical treatment with a commercial Ag[NH₃]₂F product with laboratory-prepared Ag[NH₃]₂F on the demineralisation of human enamel. This was achieved by investigating the effects of topical treatment with the Silver Capsule of Riva Star on demineralisation of human enamel using the techniques mentioned above.
10.3 Materials and Methods

The protocol used in this study is shown as a flowchart in Fig. 10.1. Firstly, the effects of silver compounds on the demineralisation of human enamel (n = 6 each) were investigated using ISEs as described in Chapter 8. Next, enamel blocks from each treatment group underwent digital photographic imaging, SEM and EDX, MAS-NMR, and Knoop micro-hardness analyses.

**Figure 10.1 – Flowchart of the protocol of the study.**
10.3.1 ISE Study

Sixty-six enamel blocks were sectioned from caries-free permanent molars (QMREC 2011/99) using a cutting machine (Struers Accutom-5, USA). Blocks were polished (300 LVAC, Kemet, UK) with carbide papers with roughness up to P4000 under copious water cooling to flatten and remove approximately 100 μm (thickness measured with calliper) of the enamel surface. The polishing procedure was required to avoid interference from high fluoride concentration in the outermost layer of enamel, which varies between individuals (Section 1.2.1), during demineralisation. Subsequently, blocks were varnished with red nail lacquer (KIKO, Italy) to leave only a 3 mm X 4 mm window on each block exposed (Fig. 10.2). The window sizes were standardised to control the area exposed to acid challenge. Afterwards, blocks were allocated into eleven treatment groups (n = 6 each) (shown in Table 10.1). The demineralisation solution was made using 0.1 M CH₃COOH buffered to pH 4.0, using KOH, as described in Section 6.3.2.

Calibrations of Ca²⁺, F⁻ and Ag⁺ ISEs were conducted before each experiment, as described in Section 6.3.3, but at 37±0.3 °C (LLOD of Ca²⁺: 0.023 mM, LLOD of F⁻: 0.001 mM, LLOD of Ag⁺: 0.001 mM). Further, the activity coefficient of each ion was calculated with an ionic speciation program (Chemist, MicroMath, USA) (activity coefficient of Ca²⁺ ≈ 0.6, F⁻ ≈ 1, Ag⁺ ≈ 1).
Table 10.1 – Compositions of treatment groups.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group names</th>
<th>Compositions</th>
<th>*Preparation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>De-ionised water</td>
<td>From Triplered Ltd (UK)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>0.75 M AgNO$_3$ + 2 mL DW</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>2.36 M AgNO$_3$ + 2 mL DW</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>3.16 M AgNO$_3$ + 2 mL DW</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>0.75 M AgF + 2 mL DW</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>2.36 M AgF + 2 mL DW</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>3.16 M AgF + 2 mL DW</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>0.75 M SDF + 1 mL 30 wt% NH$_3$OH</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>2.36 M SDF + 1 mL 30 wt% NH$_3$OH</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>3.16 M SDF + 1 mL 30 wt% NH$_3$OH</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>Silver Capsule (3.16 M)</td>
<td>From Riva Star of SDI Ltd (Australia)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* = all chemicals shown in preparation are from Sigma-Aldrich, UK

The setup and the protocol of the ISE study was the same as described in Section 8.3.1. Firstly, each varnished enamel block was immersed in 50 mL of demineralisation solution at 37±0.3 °C for 4 h using a temperature stabilised stirrer (Stuart UC152D/KIT, UK), and Ca$^{2+}$, Ag$^+$ and F$^-$ ISEs were used to simultaneously monitor the activities of Ca$^{2+}$, Ag$^+$ and F$^-$ at intervals of 1 min as demineralisation progressed. Thereafter, each demineralised enamel block was taken out, rinsed, air-dried and topically treated for 1 min with assigned application agent using a micro-brush (Centrix, USA), followed by air-drying (Crystal and Niederman, 2016). Each enamel block was then demineralised again for a further 4 h, and all the ion activities were further monitored at 1 min intervals as before.

Finally, the activity of Ca$^{2+}$ (mM) was plotted as a function of time (h) for each group, and the percentage reduction in the rate of calcium loss from enamel (PRCL$_{enamel}$) for each application was calculated, as described in Section 6.3.4. The activities of F$^-$ and Ag$^+$ were similarly plotted as a function of time.
10.3.2 Digital Photographs

Digital photographs of enamel surfaces in each treatment group were taken using a digital camera (Olympus TG-5, Japan) after the first 4 h demineralisation, after topical treatments and after further 4 h demineralisation, in order to monitor the colour changes at each step.

10.3.3 SEM and EDX Analyses

After the ISE study, experimented enamel blocks from each treatment group of ISE study (n = 2 each) were carbon-coated to be imaged with SEM and elementally analysed with EDX. SEM (FEI Inspect-F, USA) was operated at a high voltage of 5.00 kV and 5000 X magnification. Both SEM imaging and EDX analysis were conducted in the middle areas of the exposed windows to avoid the interference from the varnish.

10.3.4 $^{31}$P and $^{19}$F MAS-NMR Analyses

The varnished areas of the experimented enamel blocks were removed using a micro-motor handpiece (SAESHIN, USA), in order to avoid any interference from varnish chemicals during the MAS-NMR analysis. After removal of the nail varnished areas, experimented enamel blocks from each treatment group of ISE study (n = 2 each) were ground with a grinding machine (Glen Creston Ltd, UK) for 30 s with a frequency of 30/s into powders (weight = 0.1 g).

The enamel powders were then analysed with $^{31}$P MAS-NMR and $^{19}$F MAS-NMR (600 MHz Bruker, Coventry, UK). Solid-state $^{31}$P MAS-NMR analysis was carried out using a 14.1 Tesla spectrometer at a Larmor frequency of 242.94 Mega-hertz (MHz) for a 4 h scan with a recycle delay of 1 min. Solid-state $^{19}$F MAS-NMR analysis was carried out using a 14.1 Tesla spectrometer at a Larmor
frequency of 564.66 MHz for a 20 h scan with a recycle delay of 30 s. All spectra were obtained under magic angle spinning conditions of 20 kHz.

10.3.5 Knoop Micro-Hardness Analysis

Experimented enamel blocks from each treatment group of ISE study (n = 2 each) were varnished with blue nail lacquer (KIKO, Italy) to highlight and protect the window areas (Fig. 10.3a) during embedding of the block into acrylic resin (Kemdent, UK). Next, half of each enamel blocks were removed by polishing with carbide papers with roughness up to P4000 under copious water cooling in order to expose the middle area of each enamel cross-sections (Fig. 10.3b).

![Figure 10.3 – (a) Demineralised lesion of enamel block varnished with blue nail lacquer. (b) Resin-embedded block for micro-hardness test.](image)

Before carrying out Knoop hardness indentation, microscopic photographs (40 X) were taken by attaching a digital camera (Olympus TG-5, Japan) to the eyepiece of the Knoop hardness tester to compare the appearances of enamel lesion treated with different topical application agents.

Next, the embedded enamel blocks then underwent Knoop cross-sectional micro-hardness profiling (CSMH) using a Knoop micro-hardness tester (MicroMet 4, UK). Each indentation was conducted with a load of 50 gf for 15 s, as suggested by Craig and Peyton (1958). The micro-hardness of the enamel was determined at 10 adjacent sites at increments of 40 µm from the centre of the
blue nail varnished lesion surface toward dentine (Fig. 10.4). Three sets of indentations were carried out on each block at the same depth 100 µm apart (as shown in Fig. 10.4). The median values of the three sets of indentations conducted at the same depth level on each block were then recorded, as described by Chu and Lo (2008). Finally, the averaged values from the two enamel blocks in each treatment group were collected.

**Figure 10.4 – Schematic representation of Knoop CSMH.**
10.4 Results

10.4.1 Ca\textsuperscript{2+} ISE Study

**Fig. 10.5** shows a typical plot of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release from an enamel block of the DW treatment group. The Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was linear with time both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was increased following the DW treatment (**Table 10.2**). All six enamel blocks of the DW treatment group showed a similar linear Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release, both before and after treatments, and a similar increase in the rate of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release following treatments. Errors of gradients were calculated using SigmaPlot 10.0 (Systat Software, California, USA).

![Graph showing Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release from an enamel block](image)

**Figure 10.5** - Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of DW treatment group.

**Table 10.2** – The RCL\textsubscript{enamel} before and after DW topical treatment of the **Fig. 10.5**.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>$R_b$ +/- SE ($\times 10^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>$R_a$ +/- SE ($\times 10^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>35.97 ± 0.10</td>
<td>41.87 ± 0.10</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Fig. 10.6 shows a typical plot of Ca\(^{2+}\) release from an enamel block of the 0.75 M AgNO\(_3\) treatment group. The Ca\(^{2+}\) release was linear with time both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release was decreased following the 0.75 M AgNO\(_3\) treatment (Table 10.3). All six enamel blocks of the 0.75 M AgNO\(_3\) treatment group showed a similar linear Ca\(^{2+}\) release, both before and after treatments, and a similar reduction in the rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release following treatments.

Fig. 10.7 and Fig. 10.8 show typical plots of Ca\(^{2+}\) release from the enamel blocks of the 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO\(_3\) treatment groups. The Ca\(^{2+}\) release was also linear with time both before and after treatments. However, the reduction in the rates of Ca\(^{2+}\) release decreased with increasing concentration of AgNO\(_3\) (Table 10.3).

Table 10.3 - The RCL
eamel before and after AgNO\(_3\) topical treatments of the Fig. 10.6 – 10.8.  

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>R_b+/SE (X 10^{-3} mM/h)</th>
<th>R_a+/SE (X 10^{-3} mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgNO(_3) Tx</td>
<td>21.64 ± 0.10</td>
<td>16.97 ± 0.09</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgNO(_3) Tx</td>
<td>34.33 ± 0.10</td>
<td>34.57 ± 0.30</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgNO(_3) Tx</td>
<td>33.24 ± 0.10</td>
<td>33.54 ± 0.20</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Figure 10.6 - Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of 0.75 M AgNO\textsubscript{3} treatment group.

Figure 10.7 - Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of 2.36 M AgNO\textsubscript{3} treatment group.

Figure 10.8 - Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of 3.16 M AgNO\textsubscript{3} treatment group.
**Fig. 10.9** shows a typical plot of Ca$^{2+}$ release from an enamel block of the 0.75 M AgF treatment group. The Ca$^{2+}$ release was linear with time both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release was decreased following the 0.75 M AgF treatment (**Table 10.4**). All six enamel blocks of the 0.75 M AgF treatment group showed a similar linear Ca$^{2+}$ release, both before and after treatments, and a similar reduction in the rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release following treatments.

**Fig. 10.10** and **Fig. 10.11** show typical plots of Ca$^{2+}$ release from the enamel blocks of the 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups, The Ca$^{2+}$ release was also linear with time both before and after treatments. Further, the reduction in the rates of Ca$^{2+}$ increased with increasing concentration of AgF (**Table 10.4**).

**Table 10.4** - The RCL$_{enamel}$ before and after AgF topical treatments of the **Fig. 10.9 ~ 10.11**.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>$R_b$+/−SE ($X 10^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>$R_a$+/−SE ($X 10^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>29.69 ± 0.08</td>
<td>13.34 ± 0.05</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>33.89 ± 0.10</td>
<td>12.01 ± 0.10</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>24.97 ± 0.07</td>
<td>5.34 ± 0.04</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Figure 10.9 - Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of 0.75 M AgF treatment group.

Figure 10.10 - Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of 2.36 M AgF treatment group.

Figure 10.11 - Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of 3.16 M AgF treatment group.
Fig. 10.12 shows a typical plot of Ca$^{2+}$ release from an enamel block of the 0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment group. The Ca$^{2+}$ release was linear with time both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release was decreased following the 0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment (Table 10.5). All six enamel blocks of the 0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment group showed a similar linear Ca$^{2+}$ release, both before and after treatments, and a similar reduction in the rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release following treatments.

Fig. 10.13 and Fig. 10.14 show typical plots of Ca$^{2+}$ release from the enamel blocks of the 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups. The Ca$^{2+}$ release was also linear with time both before and after treatments. Further, the reduction in the rates of Ca$^{2+}$ increased with increasing concentration of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Table 10.5).

Table 10.5 - The RCL$_{enamel}$ before and after Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatments of the Fig. 10.12 ~ 10.14.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>$R_b$/-SE (X 10$^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>$R_a$/-SE (X 10$^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>36.02 ± 0.10</td>
<td>23.94 ± 0.10</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>31.29 ± 0.10</td>
<td>15.48 ± 0.10</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>46.44 ± 0.10</td>
<td>18.01 ± 0.20</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Figure 10.12 - Typical Ca\(^{2+}\) release of 0.75 M Ag\([\text{NH}_3\text{]}_2\text{F}\) treatment group.

Figure 10.13 - Typical Ca\(^{2+}\) release of 2.36 M Ag\([\text{NH}_3\text{]}_2\text{F}\) treatment group.

Figure 10.14 - Typical Ca\(^{2+}\) release of 3.16 M Ag\([\text{NH}_3\text{]}_2\text{F}\) treatment group.
**Fig. 10.15** shows a typical plot of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release from the enamel block of the Riva-SC treatment group. The Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was linear with time both before and after treatment. The rate of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was decreased following the Riva-SC treatment (**Table 10.6**). All six enamel blocks of the Riva-SC treatment group showed a similar linear Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release, both before and after treatments, and a similar reduction in the rate of Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release following treatments.

**Figure 10.15 – Typical Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release of Riva-SC treatment group.**

**Table 10.6 - The RCL\textsubscript{enamel} before and after Riva-SC topical treatment of the Fig. 10.15.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>R\textsubscript{b+/-} SE (X 10\textsuperscript{-3} mM/h)</th>
<th>R\textsubscript{r+/-} SE (X 10\textsuperscript{-3} mM/h)</th>
<th>p value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>26.74 ± 0.10</td>
<td>11.28 ± 0.10</td>
<td>&lt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
10.4.1.1 Summary of the Ca\textsuperscript{2+} Release from the Enamel Blocks of Each Treatment Group

Table 10.7 shows the rates of calcium loss of enamel (RCL\textsubscript{enamel}) before and after treatments, and the percentages reduction in the rates of calcium loss of enamel (PRCL\textsubscript{enamel}) of every enamel in all treatment groups. Every R\textsubscript{a} (RCL\textsubscript{enamel}) measured was significantly different (p < 0.05) from the R\textsubscript{b} (RCL\textsubscript{enamel}) of the same enamel block.

The mean RCL\textsubscript{enamel} before treatments of all treatment groups were similar (≈ 0.030 mM/h), whereas, the mean RCL\textsubscript{enamel} following treatments were different. The mean RCL\textsubscript{enamel} following topical treatments with fluoride-containing silver compounds like AgF, Ag[NH\textsubscript{3}]\textsubscript{2}F and Riva-SC, were much lower than those following topical treatments with AgNO\textsubscript{3} and DW. Further, the PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of AgF and Ag[NH\textsubscript{3}]\textsubscript{2}F treatment groups increased with increasing concentrations, whereas, the PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of AgNO\textsubscript{3} treatment group decreased with increasing concentration.

Only in the DW treatment group, the mean RCL\textsubscript{enamel} following treatments (R\textsubscript{a}) was faster than the mean RCL\textsubscript{enamel} before treatments (R\textsubscript{b}).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx Group</th>
<th>Enamel</th>
<th>$R_{0+/-}$ SE (X 10^3 mM/h)</th>
<th>$R_{0+/-}$ SE (X 10^3 mM/h)</th>
<th>PRCL$_{enamel}$ (%)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>21.65 ± 0.20</td>
<td>22.16 ± 0.10</td>
<td>-2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>35.97 ± 0.10</td>
<td>41.87 ± 0.10</td>
<td>-16.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>34.43 ± 0.20</td>
<td>38.80 ± 0.20</td>
<td>-12.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>46.69 ± 0.20</td>
<td>51.09 ± 0.10</td>
<td>-9.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>29.10 ± 0.20</td>
<td>30.69 ± 0.10</td>
<td>-5.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>20.13 ± 0.10</td>
<td>23.49 ± 0.10</td>
<td>-16.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>31.33 ± 4.05</td>
<td>34.68 ± 4.60</td>
<td>-10.5 ± 2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>33.18 ± 0.20</td>
<td>22.32 ± 0.10</td>
<td>32.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>33.91 ± 0.02</td>
<td>27.78 ± 0.20</td>
<td>18.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>21.64 ± 0.10</td>
<td>16.97 ± 0.09</td>
<td>21.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>46.20 ± 0.20</td>
<td>41.95 ± 0.10</td>
<td>9.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>11.92 ± 0.20</td>
<td>8.92 ± 0.10</td>
<td>25.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>14.12 ± 0.10</td>
<td>10.60 ± 0.10</td>
<td>24.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>26.83 ± 5.41</td>
<td>21.42 ± 5.02</td>
<td>21.9 ± 3.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>40.99 ± 0.40</td>
<td>31.20 ± 0.50</td>
<td>23.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>21.51 ± 0.20</td>
<td>22.79 ± 0.20</td>
<td>-6.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>19.13 ± 0.10</td>
<td>14.93 ± 0.10</td>
<td>22.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>34.33 ± 0.10</td>
<td>34.57 ± 0.30</td>
<td>-0.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>28.00 ± 0.10</td>
<td>30.43 ± 0.10</td>
<td>-8.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>31.58 ± 0.10</td>
<td>32.56 ± 0.30</td>
<td>-3.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>29.26 ± 3.33</td>
<td>27.74 ± 3.04</td>
<td>4.6 ± 5.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>25.92 ± 0.10</td>
<td>28.83 ± 0.30</td>
<td>-11.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>28.39 ± 0.10</td>
<td>31.12 ± 0.30</td>
<td>-9.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>43.16 ± 0.20</td>
<td>32.64 ± 0.20</td>
<td>24.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>39.34 ± 0.20</td>
<td>40.99 ± 0.30</td>
<td>-4.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>38.20 ± 0.10</td>
<td>37.62 ± 0.20</td>
<td>1.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>33.24 ± 0.10</td>
<td>33.54 ± 0.20</td>
<td>-0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>34.71 ± 2.74</td>
<td>34.12 ± 1.82</td>
<td>0.0 ± 5.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>29.69 ± 0.08</td>
<td>13.34 ± 0.05</td>
<td>55.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>50.55 ± 0.10</td>
<td>39.52 ± 0.10</td>
<td>21.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>21.34 ± 0.01</td>
<td>8.43 ± 0.10</td>
<td>60.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>19.57 ± 0.01</td>
<td>9.41 ± 0.10</td>
<td>51.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>42.16 ± 0.10</td>
<td>21.95 ± 0.10</td>
<td>47.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>20.33 ± 0.10</td>
<td>17.11 ± 0.20</td>
<td>42.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>30.61 ± 5.31</td>
<td>17.39 ± 4.84</td>
<td>46.6 ± 5.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>33.89 ± 0.10</td>
<td>12.01 ± 0.10</td>
<td>64.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>34.10 ± 0.10</td>
<td>19.23 ± 0.10</td>
<td>43.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>24.19 ± 0.10</td>
<td>8.60 ± 0.10</td>
<td>64.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>25.20 ± 0.20</td>
<td>4.72 ± 0.10</td>
<td>81.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>15.01 ± 0.10</td>
<td>7.53 ± 0.10</td>
<td>49.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>35.77 ± 0.10</td>
<td>13.04 ± 0.10</td>
<td>63.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>28.03 ± 3.28</td>
<td>10.86 ± 2.08</td>
<td>61.2 ± 5.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>44.57 ± 0.20</td>
<td>11.04 ± 0.20</td>
<td>75.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>25.14 ± 0.10</td>
<td>5.82 ± 0.21</td>
<td>76.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>52.56 ± 0.11</td>
<td>24.84 ± 0.10</td>
<td>52.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>24.97 ± 0.07</td>
<td>5.34 ± 0.04</td>
<td>78.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>33.86 ± 0.10</td>
<td>10.82 ± 0.12</td>
<td>68.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>41.03 ± 0.10</td>
<td>23.87 ± 0.20</td>
<td>41.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>37.02 ± 4.51</td>
<td>13.62 ± 3.54</td>
<td>65.6 ± 6.1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Table 10.7 continued.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx Group</th>
<th>Enamel</th>
<th>$R_a^{+/-}$ SE ($\times 10^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>$R_b^{+/-}$ SE ($\times 10^{-3}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>PRCL&lt;sub&gt;enamel (%)&lt;/sub&gt;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>36.02 + 0.10</td>
<td>23.94 + 0.10</td>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>55.34 + 0.21</td>
<td>32.87 + 0.30</td>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>38.17 + 0.30</td>
<td>23.85 + 0.60</td>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>21.52 + 0.20</td>
<td>11.25 + 0.10</td>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>23.24 + 0.30</td>
<td>13.29 + 0.30</td>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>29.00 + 0.30</td>
<td>12.28 + 0.20</td>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Average</strong></td>
<td>33.88 + 5.07</td>
<td>19.58 + 3.54</td>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>47.68 + 0.10</td>
<td>25.53 + 0.30</td>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>29.82 + 0.10</td>
<td>8.73 + 0.20</td>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>20.93 + 0.10</td>
<td>5.29 + 0.10</td>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>18.64 + 0.10</td>
<td>7.53 + 0.10</td>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>31.29 + 0.10</td>
<td>15.48 + 0.10</td>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>32.78 + 0.10</td>
<td>12.04 + 0.40</td>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Average</strong></td>
<td>30.19 + 4.22</td>
<td>12.43 + 3.00</td>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>20.82 + 0.10</td>
<td>9.31 + 0.20</td>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>42.52 + 0.20</td>
<td>15.20 + 0.20</td>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>17.54 + 0.10</td>
<td>4.10 + 0.20</td>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>26.80 + 0.20</td>
<td>7.29 + 0.10</td>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>46.44 + 0.10</td>
<td>18.01 + 0.20</td>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>32.82 + 0.10</td>
<td>12.69 + 0.10</td>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Average</strong></td>
<td>31.16 + 4.75</td>
<td>11.10 + 2.11</td>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Riva-SC Tx</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>17.08 + 0.10</td>
<td>5.40 + 0.10</td>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>45.50 + 0.20</td>
<td>18.25 + 0.20</td>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>35.26 + 0.20</td>
<td>20.74 + 0.20</td>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>26.74 + 0.10</td>
<td>11.28 + 0.10</td>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>23.81 + 0.10</td>
<td>7.03 + 0.20</td>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>41.89 + 0.20</td>
<td>13.31 + 0.10</td>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Average</strong></td>
<td>31.71 + 4.50</td>
<td>12.67 + 2.47</td>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Fig. 10.16** shows the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of 3.16 M AgNO$_3$, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. The mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC treatment groups were much higher than those of 3.16 M AgNO$_3$ treatment group, while the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of DW treatment group was negative. There were no significant differences between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of AgF, Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC treatment groups.

**Figure 10.16** - The mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of 3.16 M AgNO$_3$, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between treatment groups indicate significant differences at $p < 0.05$ between them.
Fig. 10.17 shows the mean PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO\textsubscript{3} treatment groups. The mean PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of AgNO\textsubscript{3} treatment groups decreased with increasing concentration of AgNO\textsubscript{3}. However, there was no significant difference between the mean PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO\textsubscript{3} treatment groups.

Fig. 10.18 shows that there was a log-linear dose-response relationship between the mean PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of topical treatment with AgNO\textsubscript{3} and the concentration of topically applied AgNO\textsubscript{3}.

\textbf{Figure 10.17} – The mean PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO\textsubscript{3} treatment groups.

\textbf{Figure 10.18} - A log-linear dose-response relationship between the mean PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of AgNO\textsubscript{3} and [AgNO\textsubscript{3}].
Fig. 10.19 shows the mean PRCL$\text{enamel}$ of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. The mean PRCL$\text{enamel}$ of AgF treatment groups increased with increasing concentration of AgF. However, there was no significant difference between the mean PRCL$\text{enamel}$ of 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups.

Fig. 10.20 shows that there was a log-linear dose-response relationship between the mean PRCL$\text{enamel}$ of topical treatment with AgF and the concentration of topically applied AgF.
Fig. 10.21 shows the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups. The mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups increased with increasing concentration of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F. However, there was no significant difference between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups.

Fig. 10.22 shows that there was a log-linear dose-response relationship between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of topical treatment with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and the concentration of topically applied Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F.

![Graph showing the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups.](image)

**Figure 10.21** - The mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups.
Figure 10.22 - A log-linear dose-response relationship between the mean PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of Ag[\text{NH}_3]_2F and [Ag[\text{NH}_3]_2F].

10.4.2 Ag\textsuperscript+ ISE Study

Fig. 10.23 shows the Ag\textsuperscript+ release profiles of 3.16 M AgNO\textsubscript{3}, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[\text{NH}_3]_2F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups, which were based on the mean activities of Ag\textsuperscript+ released from the six enamel blocks of each treatment group. After re-immersion of enamel blocks topically treated with silver compounds into acids, all the mean activities of Ag\textsuperscript+ in the solution increased rapidly from zero, and then subsequently decreased continually.

Even though the Ag\textsuperscript+ release profiles are not linear, the approximate rates of the changes in the mean Ag\textsuperscript+ activities can be extrapolated by the slopes of trendlines of initial increase and later decrease in Ag\textsuperscript+ activities. The standard error of each trendline was shown later in Table 10.8.

No Ag\textsuperscript+ release was detected in DW treatment group.
Figure 10.23 - The mean Ag\(^{+}\) release from enamel under pH 4.0 demineralisation before and after topical treatments with DW, and 3.16 M silver compounds.
Fig. 10.24 ~ Fig. 10.26 show the Ag⁺ release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups, which were based on the mean activities of Ag⁺ released from the six enamel blocks of each treatment group.

After re-immersion of enamel blocks topically treated with AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F into acids, all the mean activities of Ag⁺ in the solution increased rapidly from zero, and then subsequently decreased continually.

Even though the Ag⁺ release profiles are not linear, the approximate rates of the changes in the mean Ag⁺ activities can be extrapolated by the slopes of trendlines of initial increase and later decrease in Ag⁺ activities. The standard error of each trendline was shown later in Table 10.8.
Figure 10.24 - The Ag⁺ release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO₃ treatment groups.

Figure 10.25 - The Ag⁺ release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups.

Figure 10.26 - The Ag⁺ release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups.
Table 10.8 shows the mean initial rates ($R_i$) of increase in the Ag$^+$ activities and the mean later rates ($R_L$) of decrease in the Ag$^+$ activities of all treatment groups.

**Table 10.8 – Mean $R_i$ and mean $R_L$ of the Ag$^+$ release following each treatment.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx Group</th>
<th>Mean $R_i$+/-SE (X 10$^{-2}$ mM/h)</th>
<th>Mean $R_L$+/-SE (X 10$^{-2}$ mM/h)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>7.53 ± 0.66</td>
<td>-0.03 ± 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>9.56 ± 0.88</td>
<td>-0.16 ± 0.06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgNO$_3$ Tx</td>
<td>17.71 ± 5.09</td>
<td>-0.24 ± 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>13.05 ± 4.37</td>
<td>-0.16 ± 0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>20.55 ± 5.09</td>
<td>-0.30 ± 0.06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>10.90 ± 2.76</td>
<td>-0.27 ± 0.07</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>13.61 ± 3.36</td>
<td>-0.18 ± 0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>26.08 ± 7.02</td>
<td>-0.14 ± 0.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx</td>
<td>13.11 ± 1.38</td>
<td>-0.24 ± 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>25.54 ± 4.72</td>
<td>-0.32 ± 0.05</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Fig. 10.27a and b shows the mean $R_I$ and the mean $R_L$ of Ag$^+$ release of 3.16 M AgNO$_3$, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag(NH$_3$)$_2$F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. There was a significant difference between the $R_I$ of 3.16 M AgF and Riva-SC treatment groups. However, there were no significant differences between the $R_L$ of each treatment group.

Figure 10.27 - (a) Mean $R_I$ and (b) mean $R_L$ of the Ag$^+$ release of DW and 3.16 M treatment groups.
Fig. 10.28 ~ Fig. 10.30 show the mean $R_I$ and the mean $R_L$ of Ag+ release of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups. In AgNO₃ treatment groups, both the mean $R_I$ and the mean $R_L$ of Ag+ release increased with concentration. However, in AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups, no relationships between either the mean $R_I$ or the mean $R_L$ of the Ag+ release, and the concentrations were found.

**Figure 10.28** - (a) Mean $R_I$ and (b) mean $R_L$ of the Ag+ release of AgNO₃ treatment groups.

**Figure 10.29** - (a) Mean $R_I$ and (b) mean $R_L$ of the Ag+ release of AgF treatment groups.

**Figure 10.30** - (a) Mean $R_I$ and (b) mean $R_L$ of the Ag+ release of Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups.
10.4.2.1 Mean \([\text{Ag}^+]\) during the post-treatment 4 h periods of Each Treatment Group

The mean \([\text{Ag}^+]\) during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated enamel blocks into acid ([\text{Ag}^+]_{4h}) (Table 10.9) of each treatment group was calculated, in order to compare the effects of \text{Ag}^+ in the acid on the demineralisation of the enamel.

Table 10.9 – The mean \([\text{Ag}^+]\) during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated enamel blocks into acids ([\text{Ag}^+]_{4h}) of each treatment group.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx groups</th>
<th>([\text{Ag}^+]_{4h})</th>
<th>ppm</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW</td>
<td>0.0 \pm 0.0 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>0.00 \pm 0.00 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M \text{AgNO}_3</td>
<td>5.4 \pm 0.2 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>0.58 \pm 0.02 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M \text{AgNO}_3</td>
<td>6.3 \pm 0.4 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>0.68 \pm 0.04 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M \text{AgNO}_3</td>
<td>8.8 \pm 1.7 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>0.95 \pm 0.18 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M \text{AgF}</td>
<td>8.3 \pm 2.1 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>0.89 \pm 0.22 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M \text{AgF}</td>
<td>10.7 \pm 2.3 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>1.16 \pm 0.25 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M \text{AgF}</td>
<td>8.3 \pm 2.5 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>0.89 \pm 0.27 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M \text{Ag[NH}_3\text{]}_2\text{F}</td>
<td>7.5 \pm 1.0 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>0.81 \pm 0.11 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M \text{Ag[NH}_3\text{]}_2\text{F}</td>
<td>10.5 \pm 2.6 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>1.14 \pm 0.28 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M \text{Ag[NH}_3\text{]}_2\text{F}</td>
<td>7.2 \pm 0.3 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>0.78 \pm 0.06 ppm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC</td>
<td>10.1 \pm 1.5 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM}</td>
<td>1.09 \pm 0.16 ppm</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Fig. 10.31** shows the [Ag⁺]₄h (ppm) of 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. The [Ag⁺]₄h of the Riva-SC treatment group was the highest. However, the only significant difference was between the [Ag⁺]₄h of Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC treatment groups.

**Figure 10.31** – The [Ag⁺]₄h (ppm) of 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups.

**Fig. 10.32** shows the [Ag⁺]₄h (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO₃ treatment groups. The [Ag⁺]₄h of the AgNO₃ treatment groups increased with increasing concentration of AgNO₃. However, there was no significant difference between the [Ag⁺]₄h of the 2.36 M and 3.16 M treatment groups.

**Fig. 10.33** shows the [Ag⁺]₄h (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. There were no significant differences between the [Ag⁺]₄h of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups.

**Fig. 10.34** shows the [Ag⁺]₄h (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups. There were no significant differences between the [Ag⁺]₄h of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups.
Figure 10.32 - The $[\text{Ag}^+]_{4h}$ (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO$_3$ treatment groups.

Figure 10.33 - The $[\text{Ag}^+]_{4h}$ (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups.

Figure 10.34 - The $[\text{Ag}^+]_{4h}$ (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups.
10.4.3 F⁻ ISE Study

Fig. 10.35 shows the F⁻ release profiles of 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups, which were based on the mean activities of F⁻ released from the six enamel blocks each treatment group. After re-immersion of enamel blocks topically treated with fluoride-containing silver compounds back into acids, there was a rapid increase in all the mean activities of F⁻ from zero, which slowed with time.

Even though the F⁻ release profiles are not linear, the approximate rates of the changes in the mean F⁻ activities can be extrapolated by the slopes of trendlines of initial and later increase in F⁻ activities. The standard error of each trendline was shown later in Table 10.10.

No F⁻ release was detected in DW and AgNO₃ treatment groups.

**Figure 10.35** - The mean F⁻ release from enamel under pH 4.0 demineralisation before and after topical treatment with DW, and 3.16 M silver compounds.
**Fig. 10.36** and **Fig. 10.37** show the F⁻ release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups, which were based on the mean activities of F⁻ released from the six enamel blocks of each treatment group. After re-immersion of enamel blocks topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F back into acids, there was a rapid increase in all the mean activities of F⁻ from zero, which slowed with time.

Even though the F⁻ release profiles are not linear, the approximate rates of the changes in the mean F⁻ activities can be extrapolated by the slopes of trendlines of initial and later increase in F⁻ activities. The standard error of each trendline is shown later in Table 10.10.

![Graph showing F⁻ release profiles](image)

**Figure 10.36** - The F⁻ release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups.

![Graph showing F⁻ release profiles](image)

**Figure 10.37** - The F⁻ release profiles of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups.
Table 10.10 shows the mean initial rates (\( R_I \)) of increase in the F\(^-\) activities and the mean later rates (\( R_L \)) of increase in the F\(^-\) activities of all treatment groups.

Table 10.10 – Mean \( R_I \) and mean \( R_L \) of the F\(^-\) release following each treatment.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx Group</th>
<th>Mean ( R_I )/-SE (X 10(^{-2}) mM/h)</th>
<th>Mean ( R_L )/-SE (X 10(^{-2}) mM/h)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgNO(_3) Tx</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgNO(_3) Tx</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgNO(_3) Tx</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
<td>0.00 ± 0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>4.17 ± 2.29</td>
<td>0.29 ± 0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>7.50 ± 1.31</td>
<td>0.39 ± 0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgF Tx</td>
<td>25.08 ± 5.92</td>
<td>0.49 ± 0.06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH(_3)](_2)F Tx</td>
<td>21.24 ± 5.49</td>
<td>0.12 ± 0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH(_3)](_2)F Tx</td>
<td>31.17 ± 3.37</td>
<td>0.08 ± 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH(_3)](_2)F Tx</td>
<td>72.77 ± 4.94</td>
<td>0.09 ± 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td>77.93 ± 3.70</td>
<td>0.08 ± 0.03</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Fig. 10.38a and b shows the mean R$_I$ and the mean R$_L$ of F$^-$ release of 3.16 M AgNO$_3$, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. The mean R$_I$ of 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC treatment groups were significantly higher than that of 3.16 M AgF treatment group. However, the mean R$_L$ of 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC treatment groups were significantly lower than that of 3.16 M AgF treatment group.

![Graph showing R$_I$ and R$_L$ of F$^-$ release](image)

**Figure 10.38** - (a) Mean R$_I$ and (b) mean R$_L$ of the F$^-$ release of DW and 3.16 M treatment groups.

Fig. 10.39 and Fig. 10.40 show the mean R$_I$ and the mean R$_L$ of F$^-$ release of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups. In AgF
treatment groups, both the mean $R_I$ and the mean $R_L$ of $F^-$ release increased with concentration. In Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups, the mean $R_I$ of $F^-$ release increased with concentration. However, there was no relationship between the mean $R_L$ of $F^-$ release and the concentration of topically applied Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F was found.

**Figure 10.39** - (a) Mean $R_I$ and (b) mean $R_L$ of the $F^-$ release of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups.

**Figure 10.40** - (a) Mean $R_I$ and (b) mean $R_L$ of the $F^-$ release of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups.
10.4.3.1 Mean \([F^-]\) during the post-treatment 4 h periods of Each Treatment Group

The mean \([F^-]\) during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated enamel blocks into acid \((\text{[F]}_{4\text{h}})\) (Table 10.11) of each treatment group was calculated, in order to compare the effects of \(F^-\) in the acid on the demineralisation of the enamel.

**Table 10.11** – The mean \([F^-]\) during the 4 h demineralisation period after re-immersion of the topically treated enamel blocks into acids \((\text{[F]}_{4\text{h}})\) of each treatment group.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tx groups</th>
<th>([F^-]_{4\text{h}})</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW</td>
<td>(0.0 \pm 0.0 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgNO(_3)</td>
<td>(0.0 \pm 0.0 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgNO(_3)</td>
<td>(0.0 \pm 0.0 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgNO(_3)</td>
<td>(0.0 \pm 0.0 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgF</td>
<td>(6.2 \pm 0.6 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgF</td>
<td>(8.8 \pm 0.8 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgF</td>
<td>(17.8 \pm 1.8 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH(_3)](_2)F</td>
<td>(13.5 \pm 1.7 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH(_3)](_2)F</td>
<td>(16.5 \pm 2.5 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH(_3)](_2)F</td>
<td>(21.9 \pm 1.2 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC</td>
<td>(21.1 \pm 1.0 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mM})</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Fig. 10.41** shows the $[F]_{4h}$ (ppm) of 3.16 M AgNO$_3$, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. The $[F]_{4h}$ of the 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC treatment groups were higher than that of the 3.16 M AgF treatment group. However, there was no significant difference between the $[F]_{4h}$ of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC treatment groups, and there was no significant difference between the $[F]_{4h}$ of AgF and Riva-SC treatment groups.

**Figure 10.41** - The $[F]_{4h}$ (ppm) of 3.16 M AgNO$_3$, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups.

**Fig. 10.42** shows the $[F]_{4h}$ (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. The $[F]_{4h}$ in the solution increased with increasing concentration of AgF.

**Fig. 10.43** shows the $[F]_{4h}$ (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups. The $[F]_{4h}$ in the solution increased with increasing concentration of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F.
Figure 10.42 - The $[F]_{4h}$ (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups.

Figure 10.43 - The $[F]_{4h}$ (ppm) of 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups.
10.4.4 Digital Photographs

**Fig. 10.44** and **Fig. 10.45** show that following topical treatments with AgNO$_3$, AgF, and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, yellow staining was observed, which then turned to black after further 4 h demineralisation. Further, the yellow and black staining increased with increasing concentrations of AgNO$_3$, AgF, and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F.

No staining was observed on the enamel surfaces topically treated with DW.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>After the first 4 h demin.</th>
<th>After topical treatment</th>
<th>After further 4 h demin.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DW Tx</td>
<td><img src="image1" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image2" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image3" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riva-SC Tx</td>
<td><img src="image4" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image5" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image6" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Figure 10.44** - *The colours of enamel treated with DW and Riva-SC following different treatments of the ISE study.*
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>After the first 4 h domin.</th>
<th>After topical treatment</th>
<th>After further 4 h domin.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgNO₃ Tx</td>
<td><img src="image1" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image2" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image3" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgNO₃ Tx</td>
<td><img src="image4" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image5" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image6" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgNO₃ Tx</td>
<td><img src="image7" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image8" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image9" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M AgF Tx</td>
<td><img src="image10" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image11" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image12" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M AgF Tx</td>
<td><img src="image13" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image14" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image15" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M AgF Tx</td>
<td><img src="image16" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image17" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image18" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td><img src="image19" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image20" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image21" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td><img src="image22" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image23" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image24" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx</td>
<td><img src="image25" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image26" alt="Image" /></td>
<td><img src="image27" alt="Image" /></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Figure 10.45** - The colours of enamel treated with different concentrations of AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F following different treatments of the ISE study.
10.4.5 SEM Images Analysis

**Fig. 10.46a** is a typical SEM image of enamel topically treated with DW after demineralisation, showing hollow enamel cores, breakages and irregular craters on the enamel surfaces.

**Fig. 10.46b ~ Fig. 10.46d** are typical SEM images of enamel topically treated with AgNO₃ after demineralisation, showing craters and breakages on the enamel surfaces. Demineralised pores were observed on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M and 2.36 M AgNO₃. However, only uneven demineralised surfaces were observed on the surfaces topically treated with 0.75 M AgNO₃, (Fig. 10.46b). Further, the demineralised pores observed on the 3.16 M AgNO₃ treated enamel surfaces were deeper than those observed on the 2.36 M AgNO₃ treated enamel surfaces. Numerous cubic particles (~ 1.5 μm) (Fig. 10.46b ~ Fig. 10.46d) were deposited on all enamel surfaces treated with AgNO₃. Further, the number of particles increased with increasing concentration of AgNO₃.

**Fig. 10.46e ~ Fig. 10.46j** are typical SEM images of enamel topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F after demineralisation, showing that mainly ripple-like features observed on all enamel surfaces. On enamel surfaces treated with 0.75 M AgF and 0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, focal pores (Worawongvasu, 2015) and narrow breakages were also found (Fig. 10.46e and Fig. 10.46h). Numerous cubic particles (~ 1.5 μm) and granular particles (~ 1 μm) were observed on enamel surfaces treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.46e ~ Fig. 10.46j). Further, the number of these particles increased with increasing concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F.

**Fig. 10.46k** is a typical SEM image of enamel topically treated with Riva-SC after demineralisation, showing similar demineralised surfaces to those topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F. Further, numerous cubic particles (~ 1.5 μm) and granular particles (~ 1 μm) were also observed on the surfaces topically treated Riva-SC. Narrow breakages were occasionally observed.
Figure 10.46 - Typical SEM images of enamel blocks of (a) DW Tx, (b) 0.75 M AgNO₃ Tx, (c) 2.36 M AgNO₃ Tx and (d) 3.16 M AgNO₃ Tx, (e) 0.75 M AgF Tx, (f) 2.36 M AgF Tx and (g) 3.16 M AgF Tx, (h) 0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx, (i) 2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx and (j) 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx, and (k) Riva-SC Tx.
10.4.6 EDX Analysis

Fig. 10.47 shows the mean atomic percentages of Ag detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW after demineralisation. Elemental Ag was present on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC. The mean atomic percentage of Ag detected in 3.16 M AgF treatment group was higher than that in 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment group, both of which were higher than 3.16 M AgNO₃ treatment group. There were no significant differences between the mean atomic Ag % of Riva-SC and other treatment groups.

Figure 10.47 – The mean atomic percentages of Ag of 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups.
**Fig. 10.48** shows the mean atomic percentages of Ag detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgNO$_3$. All the mean Ag atomic percentages were low, and there were no significant differences between the mean atomic percentages of Ag of each treatment group.

**Fig. 10.49** shows the mean atomic percentages of Ag detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF. The mean Ag atomic percentage increased with increasing concentration of AgF. However, there was no significant difference between the mean Ag atomic percentages of 2.36 M AgF and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups.

**Fig. 10.50** shows the mean atomic percentages of Ag detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F. The mean Ag atomic percentage increased with increasing concentration of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F.
**Figure 10.48 -** The mean atomic percentages of Ag of AgNO\(_3\) treatment groups.

**Figure 10.49 -** The mean atomic percentages of Ag of AgF treatment groups.

**Figure 10.50 -** The mean atomic percentages of Ag of Ag[\(\text{NH}_3\)]\(_2\)F treatment groups.
Fig. 10.51 shows the mean atomic percentages of F detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW after demineralisation. Elemental F was present on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC. The mean atomic percentages of F detected in 3.16 M AgF and Riva-SC treatment groups were higher than that in 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment group. There was no significant difference between the mean atomic F % of Riva-SC and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups.

![Figure 10.51 - The mean atomic percentages of F of 3.16 M AgNO₃, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Riva-SC and DW treatment groups. Error bars show the standard errors. Linking lines between bars indicate significant differences at p < 0.05 between treatment groups.](image)

Fig. 10.52 shows the mean atomic percentages of F detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M AgF. The mean F atomic percentage increased with increasing concentration of AgF. There was no significant difference between the mean F atomic percentages of 2.36 M AgF and 3.16 M AgF treatment groups. Further, there was no significant difference
between the mean F atomic percentages of 2.36 M AgF and 0.75 M AgF treatment groups.

**Fig. 10.53** shows the mean atomic percentages of F detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F. The mean F atomic percentage increased with increasing concentration of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F. No F was detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F.

**Figure 10.52** - The mean atomic percentages of F of AgF treatment groups.

**Figure 10.53** - The mean atomic percentages of F of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups.
10.4.7 $^{31}$P MAS-NMR Analysis

The $^{31}$P MAS-NMR spectra (Fig. 10.54) showed that only the chemical shift peaks of carbonate hydroxyapatite (CHAP) (3.3 ppm) were detected in powdered enamel treated with topical application agents. CHAP is the major components of enamel mineral (Section 1.2)

![Image of $^{31}$P MAS-NMR spectra]

*Figure 10.54* – $^{31}$P MAS-NMR spectra of each treatment group before and after pH 4.0 acid challenge.
10.4.8 $^{19}$F MAS-NMR Analysis

The $^{19}$F MAS-NMR spectra (Fig. 10.55) showed that no fluoride compounds were detected in powdered enamel treated with DW or different concentrations of AgNO$_3$. However, both CaF$_2$ (-109.1 ppm) and fluorohydroxyapatite (FHA) (-104.1 ppm) were detected in powdered enamel treated with different concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, and Riva-SC. The proportions of CaF$_2$ detected in AgF treatment groups were higher than those detected in Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups. Further, the proportions of CaF$_2$ increased with increasing concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topically applied. However, even after long MAS-NMR scans (20 h), only very small amounts of CaF$_2$ and FHA were detected, which could not be deconvoluted (Section 5.6).

![Figure 10.55 – $^{19}$F MAS-NMR spectra of each treatment group before and after pH 4.0 acid challenge.](image)

Figure 10.55 – $^{19}$F MAS-NMR spectra of each treatment group before and after pH 4.0 acid challenge.
10.4.9 Microscopic photographs of Human Enamel Sections

Typical microscopic photographs, taken using a digital camera attached to the eyepiece of the Knoop hardness tester suggested two types of lesions. The first type was a deep erosive-like lesion overlaying a more translucent zone of a carious lesion, observed in the enamel blocks topically treated with DW or AgNO$_3$ (Fig. 10.56a ~ Fig. 10.56d), as described by Larsen (1990). The second type was a shallow erosive-like lesion with or without the presence of a more translucent zone of carious lesion underneath, observed in the enamel blocks topically treated with AgF, Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F or Riva-SC (Fig. 10.56e ~ Fig. 10.56k).
Figure 10.56 - Typical images (40X) of lesions sections of (a) DW Tx, (b) 0.75 M AgNO$_3$ Tx, (c) 2.36 M AgNO$_3$ Tx, and (d) 3.16 M AgNO$_3$ Tx, (e) 0.75 M AgF Tx, (f) 2.36 M AgF Tx and (g) 3.16 M AgF Tx, (h) 0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx, (i) 2.36 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx and (j) 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx, and (k) Riva-SC Tx.
10.4.10 Knoop CSMH profiles of Human Enamel Sections

The Knoop CSMH profiles (Fig. 10.57a ~ Fig. 10.57d) showed that the KHN values recorded at the depth level of 40 µm were low only in DW and AgNO$_3$ treatment groups. Whereas, the KHN values recorded at all depth levels along the thickness of enamel sections in AgF, Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC treatment groups were high and similar to each other (Fig. 10.57e ~ Fig. 10.57k).

**Figure 10.57** – Knoop CSMH of (a) DW Tx, (b ~ d) AgNO$_3$ Tx, (e ~ g) AgF Tx and (h ~ j) Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F Tx in different concentrations, and (k) Riva-SC Tx.
This discussion chapter will be focused on the effects of topical treatments with DW and 3.16 M silver compounds on the demineralisation of human enamel. The dose-response effects of topical treatments with silver compounds on the demineralisation of human enamel will be discussed later in Chapter 12.

The release of Ca$^{2+}$ from the demineralising enamel blocks was approximately linear with time (Fig. 10.5 ~ Fig. 10.15). This is similar to previous ISE studies on HAP discs (Huang et al., 2018), and SMR results previously reported of enamel mineral loss from enamel during demineralisation (Anderson et al., 1998; Hassanali et al., 2017; Wang et al., 2005).

After demineralisation, the uneven enamel surfaces were observed (Fig. 10.46a ~ Fig. 10.46k), which demonstrated the aggressive destruction from the acid attack. Hollow enamel cores, breakages and focal pores were found on the demineralised surfaces, which are typical demineralised enamel lesions reported in previous studies (Wang et al., 2006; Worawongvasu, 2015).
11.1 Effects of Topical Treatment with De-ionised Water on Demineralisation of Human Enamel

In the ISE study, following the topical treatment with de-ionised water (DW) on human enamel, the demineralisation of human enamel increased (PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} = -10.5\pm2.4 \%) (Fig. 10.16). The increase in demineralisation rate of enamel may be due to the removal of softened human enamel surfaces during the topical application using a micro-brush, which exposed more soluble enamel layers underneath. Deeper layers of enamel are more soluble due to a higher content of destabilising agents such as CO\textsubscript{3}\textsuperscript{2-} and Mg\textsuperscript{2+} (Robinson et al., 2000) (Section 1.2.1). Therefore, demineralisation of human enamel is accelerated by the abrasion effects from using a micro-brush during the topical treatments.

After the ISE study, uneven enamel surfaces with hollow enamel cores were observed with SEM (Fig. 10.46a), which demonstrated a typical “honeycomb” erosion lesion, as described by Wang et al. (2006) (Section 2.3.2). Deep erosion lesions covering a more translucent zone of carious lesions were observed in the human enamel samples topically treated with DW (Fig. 10.56a). Larsen has proposed that when demineralised enamel lesions are produced artificially in aqueous solutions undersaturated with respect to both HAP and fluorapatite (FAP), the outer enamel surface is initially removed by erosion, followed by a uniform development of a carious lesion beneath the erosive lesion, so-called “double lesion” (Larsen, 1990).

As KHN numbers are associated with the mineral content in the tested enamels (Davidson et al., 1974), a double lesion resulting from demineralisation might be the reason for the low Knoop hardness values recorded at the depth levels of 40 \(\mu\text{m}\) (around 100 KHN) in enamel sections topically treated with DW (Fig. 10.57a), compared to those recorded at deeper levels (around 260 KHN).
11.2 Effects of Topical Treatment with AgNO₃ on Demineralisation of Human Enamel and Proposed Mechanistic Models

11.2.1 Following Topical Treatment with AgNO₃

In the ISE study, immediately following topical treatment with 3.16 M AgNO₃ on human enamel, yellow staining was observed on the human enamel surfaces (Fig. 10.45), which indicated the formation of yellow Ag₃PO₄ (Lewis, 1920). This was consistent with the formation of a Ag₃PO₄ protective barrier on HAP discs topically treated with AgNO₃ reported in Chapter 9. In Chapter 7, Ag⁺ was proposed to substitute for the Ca²⁺ in human enamel. Therefore, some Ag⁺ substituted enamel mineral could also be formed following the topical treatment with 3.16 M AgNO₃. This is shown schematically in Fig. 11.1.

![Figure 11.1](image)

*Figure 11.1* – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃. Ag₃PO₄ is formed on the enamel surface and some Ca²⁺ in the enamel mineral is substituted by Ag⁺.

11.2.2 After Re-immersion of Human Enamel Topically Treated with AgNO₃ into Acid

After re-immersing the human enamel topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ back into acid, the ISE data showed that there was little change in the rate of Ca²⁺ release ($PRCL_{enamel} = 0.0±5.3$ %) (Fig. 10.16). This indicated that if 3.16 M AgNO₃ is used in the clinical practice, no inhibitory efficacy of the treatment can
be expected and the cariostatic efficacy of the treatment will only rely on its antibacterial properties (Lansdown, 2002). Even though a Ag$_3$PO$_4$ protective barrier was formed on the enamel surfaces following AgNO$_3$ treatment (Yamaga et al., 1972) (Section 3.2), the inhibitory efficacy against demineralisation was low. The low inhibitory efficacy of the 3.16 M AgNO$_3$ topical treatment should be due to the accelerating effects from the micro-brush abrasion during the topical treatment (PRCL$_{enamel}$ = -10.5±2.4 %) (Section 11.1). Further, the formation of Ag$^+$ substituted enamel also compromised the inhibitory efficacy (Chapter 7). Gradually, the yellow Ag$_3$PO$_4$ particles on the treated enamel surfaces were reduced to black metallic silver due to the photosensitivity of Ag$^+$, as described by Liu et al. (2012c).

The Ag$^+$ released from the enamel sample topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO$_3$ was detected with Ag ISEs after the re-immersion of the enamel block back into acid (Fig. 10.23). The initial increase in the mean Ag$^+$ activity could result from the release of Ag$^+$ loosely attached to the enamel surfaces, whereas, the later decrease in the mean Ag$^+$ activity could result from chemical reduction of Ag$^+$. The small metallic silver particles reduced from Ag$^+$ in the solution will be dispersed due to the agitation of the magnetic stirrer.

Fig. 11.2a shows that, after re-immersing the human enamel topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO$_3$ back into acid, Ag$^+$ loosely attached to the enamel surfaces is released into solution. Further, the Ag$_3$PO$_4$ protective barrier protects the enamel from demineralisation. Fig. 11.2b shows that some Ag$^+$ in the solution and some Ag$_3$PO$_4$ on the enamel surface are gradually reduced to black metallic silver. Further, the metallic silver reduced from the Ag$^+$ in the solution will be dispersed in the solution.
Figure 11.2 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ following re-immersion back into acid. After immersion of a) Ag⁺ loosely attached to enamel surfaces is released into solution. b) Gradually, some Ag₃PO₄ on the enamel surface and some Ag⁺ in the solution are reduced to black metallic silver.

11.2.3 After Removal of Human Enamel Topically Treated with AgNO₃ from Acid

After removing the enamel block topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ from acid, SEM images showed that the enamel surfaces were less uneven than the
surfaces topically treated with DW (Fig. 10.46a and Fig. 10.46d), which demonstrated the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with 3.16 M AgNO₃. Deeper lesions observed on the enamel surfaces may be due to the loss of Ag⁺ substituted enamel, which has higher susceptibility than enamel.

Cubic particles were observed on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.46d). Lou et al. (2011) previously found that cubic Ag₃PO₄ in the HAP powders mixed with AgNO₃ was gradually reduced to cubic metallic silver. Therefore, in the present study, these cubic particles deposited on the enamel surfaces may be Ag₃PO₄ or metallic silver. However, as only black staining was observed on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.45), and no Ag₃PO₄ was detected with ³¹P MAS-NMR in the powdered enamel treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.54), most of the Ag₃PO₄ should be reduced to metallic silver over the post-treatment 4 h demineralisation period.

Fig. 10.8 shows that, during the post-treatment 4 h demineralisation period, the Ca²⁺ release from demineralising human enamel following the 3.16 M AgNO₃ topical treatment was linear with time, even though Ag₃PO₄ in the protective barrier was gradually reduced to metallic silver. This indicates that the efficacy of topical treatment with 3.16 M AgNO₃ was not subsequently affected by the chemical reduction of Ag₃PO₄ in the protective barrier to metallic silver. Therefore, the black metallic silver particles reduced from Ag₃PO₄ particles continued to play the same role as Ag₃PO₄ particles in the protective barrier during demineralisation. It has been proposed that topical AgNO₃ can lead to formation of a black protective barrier on the treated tooth surface to inhibit demineralisation (Miller, 1905). Further, it has been reported that the black staining of teeth restored with amalgam can lead to the inhibition of dental caries progression (Stebbins, 1891).

The microscopic photographs taken through the eyepiece of the Knoop micro-hardness tester showed “double lesions” in enamel sections topically treated with 3.16 M of AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.56d), which were similar to those reported enamel sections topically treated with DW (Fig. 10.56a). Further, lower Knoop hardness values were recorded at the depth levels of 40 µm (around 120 KHN) in enamel.
sections topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃, compared to those recorded at deeper levels (around 280 KHN) (Fig. 10.57d), which was also similar to the results of DW topical treatment group (Fig. 10.57a). This indicates that the inhibitory efficacy of the AgNO₃ treatment was low. A previous study has also reported that there was no difference between the lesion depths of enamels treated with AgNO₃ and DW after demineralisation (Liu et al., 2012b).

Fig. 11.3 shows that, after removing the enamel block topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ from acid, deeper lesions are developed in the Ag⁺ substituted enamel, therefore uneven demineralised enamel surface is observed. Further, all the Ag₃PO₄ on the enamel surface is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining. These metallic silver particles continue to protect the enamel as Ag₃PO₄ during the demineralisation.

Figure 11.3 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with AgNO₃ after 4 h demineralisation. Deeper lesions are developed in the substituted enamel, therefore uneven demineralised enamel surface is observed. Further, all the Ag₃PO₄ is reduced to black metallic silver causing black staining.

11.2.4 Analysis of the Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatment with AgNO₃ on Demineralisation of Human Enamel
As discussed in Section 9.2.4, inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment can be influenced by the abrasion effects from using a micro-brush during the topical treatment and the effects of topically applied agent (Fig. 9.4). Therefore, as the abrasion effects from using a micro-brush during the topical treatments (PRCL<sub>enamel</sub> = -10.5±2.4 %) accelerated the demineralisation of human enamel, the inhibitory efficacy (PRCL<sub>enamel</sub> = 0.0±5.3 %) observed following the topical treatment with 3.16 M AgNO<sub>3</sub> should totally rely on the effects of topically applied AgNO<sub>3</sub>.

The effects of topically applied AgNO<sub>3</sub> include the effects of the reaction products deposited on the enamel surfaces and the effects of the ions released from the topically treated enamel blocks (Fig. 9.4). Ag<sub>3</sub>PO<sub>4</sub> particles were formed as a protective barrier on the enamel topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO<sub>3</sub> (Section 11.2.2), which contributed to the inhibitory efficacy. However, as the Ag<sup>+</sup> in the solution released from the treated enamel accelerated the demineralisation of enamel (see Chapter 7), the inhibitory efficacy was compromised. The [Ag<sup>+</sup>]<sub>4h</sub> in the solution following 3.16 M topical treatment was 0.95±0.18 ppm (Table 10.9). According to the log-linear dose-response of Ag<sup>+</sup> on demineralisation of enamel reported previously (Fig. 7.4), the effect of the Ag<sup>+</sup> at 0.95 ppm will accelerate the enamel demineralisation by 1.1 % (PRML<sub>enamel</sub>).

11.2.5 Conclusions

In conclusion, Sections 11.2.1, 11.2.2 11.2.3 and 11.2.4 show that the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with AgNO<sub>3</sub> on demineralisation of enamel is associated with the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag<sub>3</sub>PO<sub>4</sub>. This is similar to the inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgNO<sub>3</sub> on demineralisation of HAP discs (Chapter 9).

11.3 Effects of Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH<sub>3</sub>]<sub>2</sub>F on Demineralisation of Human Enamel and Proposed Mechanistic Models
11.3.1 Following Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F

In the ISE study, immediately following topical treatment with 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on human enamel, yellow staining was observed on the human enamel surfaces (**Fig.10.45**), which indicated the formation of yellow Ag$_3$PO$_4$. Further, CaF$_2$ and fluorohydroxyapatite (FHA) in the powdered enamel treated with 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F were also detected with $^{19}$F MAS-NMR (**Fig. 10.55**). These powdered enamel samples were collected after the ISE study. As the [F$^{-}$]$_4$h of 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F treatment groups during the post-treatment 4 h demineralisation periods of the ISE study were too low (< 1 ppm) (**Table 10.11**) to facilitate the formation of CaF$_2$ (Rosin-Grget *et al.*, 2013) (Section 2.4), these CaF$_2$ and FHA should be formed during topical treatments. It has been reported that, under pH 4.0 acid challenge, CaF$_2$ (with minor FHA) could be predominantly formed on human enamel only when the concentration of F$^{-}$ in the solution was above 135 ppm (Mohammed *et al.*, 2013). Previous study has found Ag$_3$PO$_4$ and CaF$_2$ in enamel powder mixed with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Suzuki *et al.*, 1974). However, no FHA was found due to the limitation of characterisation ability of X-ray diffraction analysis (XRD).

Therefore, the CaF$_2$ and FHA participate in the formation of the protective barrier following 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatments. As Ca$^{2+}$ lost from enamel due to the formation of Ag$^{+}$ substituted enamel can be preserved as CaF$_2$, and unstable Ag$^{+}$ substituted enamel can be replaced by more stable FHA (Robinson, 2009), enamel blocks topically treated with 3.16 M AgF, and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F should be better protected against demineralisation than those topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO$_3$. This is shown schematically in **Fig. 11.4**.
11.3.2 After Re-immersion of Human Enamel Topically Treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F into Acid

After re-immersing the human enamel topically treated with 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F back into acid, the ISE data showed that there was an immediate reduction in the rate of Ca²⁺ release (Fig. 10.11 and Fig 10.14). The mean PRCL enamel of the 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F (65.6±6.1 % and 65.3±3.3 %) were much higher than that of the 3.16 M AgNO₃ treatment group (0.0±5.3 %) (Fig. 10.16), showing that the inhibitory efficacy of F⁻ was greater than that of Ag⁺.

Previous studies also found that Ag[NH₃]₂F treated demineralised enamel block released less Ca²⁺ into demineralisation solution leading to less mineral loss (Wu and Yang, 2002, Rosas et al., 2014). The pronounced inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with these fluoride-containing silver compounds should be associated with the additional deposition of CaF₂ and the formation of acid-resistant FHA (Arends and Christoffersen, 1990; ten Cate, 1997) (Section 2.4). Therefore, the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F are associated with the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag₃PO₄, CaF₂ and FHA. Gradually, yellow Ag₃PO₄ on the treated enamel surfaces was reduced to black metallic silver due to the photosensitivity of Ag⁺, as described by Liu et al. (2012c).

The Ag⁺ released from the human enamel topically treated with 3.16 M AgF, and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F were detected with Ag⁺ ISEs after the re-immersion of the enamel back into acid (Fig. 10.23). As mentioned in 3.16 M AgNO₃ treatment group (Section 11.2.2), the initial increase in the mean Ag⁺ activity could result...
from the release of Ag⁺ loosely attached to the enamel surfaces, whereas, the later decrease in the mean Ag⁺ activity could result from chemical reduction of Ag⁺. These metallic silver particles will be dispersed in the solution due to the agitation of the magnetic stirrer.

**Fig. 10.27a** and **b** shows that the increase rate of Ag⁺ activities and the later decrease rate of Ag⁺ activities following 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatments were similar. This indicates that the ability of ammonia in hindering the chemical reduction of Ag⁺ was not obvious following the Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment (Liu *et al.*, 2012b) (Section 3.4). Similar Ag⁺ release profiles explain why there were no significant differences between the [Ag⁺]₄h of 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment groups (**Fig. 10.31**). Therefore, the effects of Ag⁺ in the solution on both 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topically treated enamel blocks should be similar.

The F⁻ released from the human enamel topically treated with 3.16 M AgF, and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F were detected with F⁻ ISEs after the re-immersion of the enamel back into acid (**Fig. 10.35**). The initial increase in the mean F⁻ activity could result from the release of F⁻ loosely attached to the enamel surfaces (Arends and Christoffersen, 1990; Dijkman *et al.*, 1982), whereas, the later increase in the mean F⁻ activity could result from the slow dissolution of CaF₂-like globules (CaF₂ with the adsorption of HPO₄²⁻), favouring the formation of FHA (ten Cate, 2013; Vogel, 2011) (Section 2.4). The rates of initial F⁻ release from human enamel (**Fig. 10.35**) are faster than the rates of initial F⁻ release from HAP discs observed in chapter 8 (**Fig. 8.13**). This may be due to the porosity of human enamel (about 1 ~ 2 %) being lower than that of HAP discs (about 20 %), so the diffusion of F⁻ from the human enamel is faster due to reduced adsorption ability of F⁻ to the human enamel.

**Fig. 10.38a** and **b** shows that the initial increase rate of F⁻ activity following 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment was faster than that following 3.16 M AgF topical treatment. However, the later increase rate of F⁻ activity following 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment was slower than that following 3.16 M AgF topical treatment. This may be due to that the proportion of CaF₂ without the adsorption of HPO₄²⁻, which has higher solubility, formed following 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topical
treatment was higher than that following 3.16 M AgF topical treatment, leading to faster initial F⁻ release. Further, the proportion of CaF₂ with the adsorption of HPO₄²⁻ (CaF₂-like globule) formed following 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment was lower than that following 3.16 M AgF topical treatment, leading slower later F⁻ release. The much faster initial F⁻ release following 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment resulted in significant higher [F⁻]₄h than that detected following 3.16 M AgF topical treatment (Fig. 10.41). Therefore, the effects of F⁻ in the solution on 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topically treated enamel blocks should be higher than those on 3.16 M AgF topically treated enamel blocks. Less CaF₂-like globules formed following 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatment may be due to the interference of the adsorption of HPO₄²⁻ around CaF₂ surfaces. The most likely interference factor could be the ammonium (NH₄⁺) dissolved from the Ag[NH₃]₂F. However, further studies are required to confirm the postulation.

Fig. 11.5a shows that, after re-immersing the human enamel topically treated with 3.16 M AgF or 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F back into acid, both Ag⁺ and F⁻ loosely attached to enamel surface are released into solution. Further, the protective barrier composed of Ag₃PO₄, CaF₂ and FHA protects the enamel from demineralisation. Fig. 11.5b shows that some Ag⁺ in the solution and some Ag₃PO₄ on the enamel surface are gradually reduced to metallic silver. Further, some CaF₂ on the enamel surface is gradually dissolved, providing F⁻ for further formation of FHA.
Figure 11.5 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with AgF or Ag(NH₃)₂F following re-immersion back into acid. a) Both Ag⁺ and F⁻ loosely attached to enamel surface are released into solution. b) Gradually, some Ag₃PO₄ on the enamel surface and some Ag⁺ in the solution are reduced to metallic silver, and some CaF₂ on the enamel surface is dissolved, providing F⁻ for further formation of FHA.
11.3.3 After Removal of Human Enamel Topically Treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F from Acid

After removing the human enamel topically treated with 3.16 AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F from acid, SEM images showed that the enamel surfaces were less uneven than those topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.46d, Fig. 10.46g and Fig. 10.46j), which demonstrated that the inhibitory efficacy of F⁻ was greater than that of Ag⁺.

Cubic and granular particles were observed on the enamel surfaces (Fig. 10.46g and Fig. 10.46j). These cubic particles should mostly be black cubic metallic silver rather than yellow cubic Ag₃PO₄ (Lou et al., 2011), as only black staining was observed on the enamel surfaces (Fig. 10.45), and no Ag₃PO₄ was detected with ³¹P MAS-NMR in the powdered enamel treated with 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.54). This indicates that most of the Ag₃PO₄ was chemically reduced to metallic silver during the post-treatment 4 h demineralisation period. Black staining of the AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F treated dental lesions has been reported by multiple clinical and in vitro studies (Peng et al., 2012, Chu et al., 2014, Zhao et al., 2017). On the other hand, the granular particles should be CaF₂-like globules (Buzalaf et al., 2011; Rolla and Saxegaard, 1990) (Section 2.4). These CaF₂-like globules sometimes clustered as an agglomeration on the treated enamel surfaces (Navarro et al., 2001), as could be seen on the enamel surfaces treated with 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.46j).

The mean atomic percentage of Ag detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgF was significantly higher than that of 3.16 M AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.47). This indicates that following 3.16 M AgF topical treatment, which facilitated the CaF₂ formation (Fig. 10.55), more Ag₃PO₄ was formed due to the further PO₄³⁻ release from the dissociation of enamel (Mohammed et al., 2013). These Ag₃PO₄ particles were then reduced to metallic silver to be detected with EDX. The mean atomic percentage of Ag detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F was significantly lower than that of 3.16 M AgF (Fig. 10.47). It may be due to that Ag₃PO₄ can be dissolved in ammonium
(Firsching, 1961) (Section 3.4.2). Therefore less metallic silver could be reduced from Ag₃PO₄ following 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment.

The mean atomic percentage of F detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgF was significantly higher than that of 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment group (Fig. 10.51), which was consistent with higher proportions of CaF₂ detected in powdered enamel treated with 3.16 M AgF than those treated with 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.55). The lower mean atomic percentage of F detected on the 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F topically treated enamel surfaces should be due to the faster initial F⁻ release (Fig. 10.38a), as discussed in Section 11.3.2.

Fig. 10.11 and Fig. 10.14 show that, during the post-treatment 4 h demineralisation period, the inhibited Ca²⁺ release from demineralising human enamel following the topical treatments with 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F was linear with time, even though Ag₃PO₄ in the protective barrier was chemically reduced and CaF₂ in the protective barrier was dissolved. This indicates that the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with these fluoride-containing silver compounds was not subsequently affected by the chemical reduction of Ag₃PO₄ to metallic silver and the dissolution of CaF₂. As mentioned in Section 11.2.3, the metallic silver particles reduced from Ag₃PO₄ particles continue to play the same role as the Ag₃PO₄ particles in the protective barrier. Therefore, further FHA formation due to the supply of F⁻ from CaF₂ dissolution should compensate for the protective effect lost from the dissolution of CaF₂ particles in the protective barrier.

Using the microscopy of the Knoop micro-hardness tester, the lesions observed in enamel sections topically treated with 3.16 M and AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F were all shallower (Fig. 10.56g and j) than those observed in 3.16 M AgNO₃ treatment group (Fig. 10.56d). This should be due to the participation of F⁻. Larsen has proposed that in a solution with a higher concentration of F⁻, the artificial demineralised erosive lesion is shallower (Larsen, 1990). It has been reported that F⁻ of Ag[NH₃]₂F can penetrate intact human enamel up to a depth of 20 μm (Suzuki et al., 1974). In the present study, the penetration depth of F⁻ should be higher as Ag[NH₃]₂F was applied on demineralised enamel surfaces. The Knoop CSMH profiles of enamel sections topically treated with 3.16 M AgF, and 3.16 M
Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.57g and j) all had similar KHN values (around 280 KHN) along the entire depth from lesion surfaces, which is due to the pronounced protective effect of these fluoride-containing silver compound topical treatments. A previous study also found that Ag[NH₃]₂F treated enamel block immersed in lactic acid for two days had less lesion depth and increased micro-hardness compared to the negative control group (Li et al., 1984). Further, it has been proposed that carious enamel treated with Ag[NH₃]₂F had increased micro-hardness up to a depth of about 150 μm, compared to lesions treated with de-ionised water (Zhao et al., 2017).

Fig. 11.6 shows that, after removing the human enamel topically treated with 3.16 AgF or 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F from acid, all the Ag₃PO₄ on the enamel is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining. Further, most of the CaF₂ is dissolved, which favours further formation of FHA. The enamel surface covered by the metallic silver, CaF₂ and FHA is protected during the demineralisation.

Figure 11.6 – Schematic representation of an enamel block topically treated with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F after 4 h demineralisation. All the Ag₃PO₄ is reduced to metallic silver causing black staining and most of the CaF₂ is dissolved which favours further formation of FHA.

11.3.4 Analysis of the Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatments with AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC on Demineralisation of Human Enamel

As discussed in Section 9.2.4, the inhibitory efficacy of the topical treatment on demineralisation can be influenced by the abrasion effects from using a micro-brush during the topical treatment and the effects of topical application agent (Fig.
However, as the abrasion effect of topical treatment accelerates the demineralisation of human enamel by 10.5±2.4 %, the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with 3.16 AgF (PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} = 65.6±6.1 %) and 3.16 M Ag[\textsc{Nh}3]2F (PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} = 65.3+3.3 %) should all be attributed to the effects of topical application agents.

The effects of topical application agents include the effects of the reaction products deposited on the enamel surfaces and the effects of the ions released from the topically treated enamel (Fig. 9.4). Ag\textsc{3}PO\textsc{4}, CaF\textsc{2} and FHA were formed as a protective barrier on the enamel topically treated with 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[\textsc{Nh}3]2F (Section 11.3.1), which contributed to the inhibitory efficacy.

After re-immersing the enamel topically treated with these fluoride-containing silver compounds back into acids, both Ag\textsuperscript{+} and F\textsuperscript{-} were released. The [Ag\textsuperscript{+}]\textsc{4h} of 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[\textsc{Nh}3]2F treatment groups were ≈ 0.89±0.27 ppm and ≈ 0.78±0.06 ppm (Table 10.9). Therefore, according to the log-linear dose-response of Ag\textsuperscript{+} on demineralisation of enamel (Fig. 7.4), the effects of the Ag\textsuperscript{+} at 0.89 ppm and 0.78 ppm will accelerate the enamel demineralisation by 0.90 % and 0.59 % (PRML\textsubscript{enamel}), respectively. On the other hand, the [F\textsuperscript{-}]\textsc{4h} of 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[\textsc{Nh}3]2F treatment groups were ≈ 0.34±0.03 ppm and ≈ 0.42±0.02 ppm (Table 10.11). Therefore, according to the log-linear dose-response of F\textsuperscript{-} on demineralisation of enamel (Fig. 6.7b), the effects of the F\textsuperscript{-} at 0.34 ppm and 0.42 ppm will inhibit the demineralisation by 29.91 % and 32.18 % (PRML\textsubscript{enamel}), respectively.

Even though the inhibitory efficacy (PRML\textsubscript{enamel}) resulting from the F\textsuperscript{-} in solution following 3.16 M AgF topical treatment is lower than that following 3.16 M Ag[\textsc{Nh}3]2F topical treatment, the PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of topical treatments with 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[\textsc{Nh}3]2F were similar (Fig. 10.16). Therefore, the inhibitory efficacy from the protective barrier formed on the human enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgF was higher than that formed on the human enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M Ag[\textsc{Nh}3]2F. This is consistent with higher amounts of silver and fluoride compounds detected on the 3.16 M AgF topically treated enamel surfaces (Fig. 10.47 and Fig. 10.51).
11.3.5 Conclusions

In conclusion, Sections 11.3.1, 11.3.2 11.3.3 and 11.3.4 show that the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with 3.16 M AgF and 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on demineralisation of human enamel is associated with the release of F$^-$ from the topically treated enamel surfaces and the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag$_3$PO$_4$, CaF$_2$ and FHA. This is similar to the inhibitory mechanisms of topical treatment with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on demineralisation of HAP discs (Chapter 9).
11.4 Difference Between the Effects of Topical Treatments with Riva-SC and 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F on Demineralisation of Human Enamel

The effects of topical treatment with Riva-SC (3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Silver Capsule of Riva Star SDI Ltd, Australia) on demineralisation of human enamel were similar to those of laboratory-prepared 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.14 ~ Fig. 10.57). This suggests that they have the same inhibitory mechanism on the demineralisation of human enamel (Fig. 11.4 ~ Fig. 11.6). However, the mean atomic percentage of Ag detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with Riva-SC was not significantly different from other treatment groups (Fig. 10.47). This may be due to that the composition of each Silver Capsules of Riva Star used in the study was not consistent. Therefore, a higher sample size is required to show the statistical differences. Further, the mean atomic percentage of F of Riva-SC treatment group was higher than that of 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F treatment group (Fig. 10.51). This may be due to that the ammonia contents in some Silver Capsules of Riva Star were lower than that in the laboratory-prepared 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F (as discussed in Section 11.3.2).
11.5 Conclusions

In conclusion, the inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgNO$_3$ on human enamel is associated with the formation of a Ag$_3$PO$_4$ protective barrier. Whereas, the inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F is associated with the F$^-$ released from the topically treated enamel and the formation of a protective barrier, composed of Ag$_3$PO$_4$, CaF$_2$ and FHA. The inhibitory mechanisms of topical treatments with silver compounds on demineralisation of human enamel are similar to those of HAP discs.

The effects of topical treatment with Silver Capsule of Riva Star (3.16 M SDF, SDI Ltd, Australia) on demineralisation of human enamel are similar to those of topical treatment with laboratory-prepared 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F.
Chapter 12 DISCUSSION OF DOSE-RESPONSE EFFECTS OF TOPICAL TREATMENTS WITH SILVER COMPOUNDS ON DEMINERALISATION OF HUMAN ENAMEL AND PROPOSED MODELS FOR MECHANISMS

The effects of topical treatments with 2.36 M, 0.75 M and 3.16 M of these silver compounds on enamel demineralisation were investigated (Chapter 10), in order to understand the dose-response mechanisms of topical treatments with AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F on demineralisation of human enamel. These concentrations are the same as those used in the commercial silver compounds such as Caristop 12% (0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Biodinamica Química E Farmacéutica Ltda), Saforide (2.36 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, Toyo Seiyaku Kasei Co. Ltd) and Riva Star (3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F, SDI Ltd, Australia) (Fung et al., 2013, SDI, 2016a). Therefore, the dose-response results reported in this study were clinically relevant to the topical treatment outcomes using these concentrations of silver compounds.
12.1 Dose-response Effects of Topical Treatment with AgNO₃ on Demineralisation of Human Enamel and Proposed Mechanistic Models

The Ca²⁺ ISE data (Fig. 10.17) showed that the mean PRCL_{enamel} of topical treatment with AgNO₃ decreased with increasing concentration. The SEM images also demonstrated similar dose-response (Fig. 10.46b ~ d). Craters and breakages observed on the surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.46d) were larger and deeper than those observed on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 2.36 M AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.46c). Further, on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 0.75 M AgNO₃, only uneven surfaces were observed (Fig. 10.46b). No dose-response was observed in the enamel sections and the Knoop CSMH profiles (Fig. 10.56b ~ d and Fig. 10.57b ~ d), as the change in the inhibitory efficacy was too small. A previous study reported that 5 min immersion of human enamel blocks in 2.36 M AgNO₃ led to negligible inhibition efficacy in demineralisation at pH 4.4 (Liu et al., 2012b), which is different from the PRCL_{enamel} (= 4.6±5.9 %) of the 2.36 M AgNO₃ topical treatment observed in the present study. This may be due to the inhibitory efficacy of the agent in their study being based on the reduction in the lesion depth measured with Micro-CT, whereas, the inhibitory efficacy in the present study was based on the subtle change in the rates of Ca²⁺ release. This may explain the lower inhibitory efficacy of the topical 2.36 M AgNO₃ treatment observed in the present study.

Cubic metallic silver particles (reduced from Ag₃PO₄) found on the enamel surfaces topically treated with higher concentrations of AgNO₃ were larger and more packed together (Fig. 10.46b ~ d), leading to the darker black staining observed on the enamel surfaces (Fig. 10.45), which indicates that the components in the protective barrier accumulated with increasing concentration of topically applied AgNO₃. The increased protective barrier would lead to increased inhibitory efficacy, which contradicts the dose-response of (PRCL_{enamel}) observed in the Ca²⁺ ISE data (Fig. 10.17).
The conflict can be explained by the loss of the protective barrier formed on the lost enamel structures due to the formation of craters and breakages. As more enamel structures were lost following the topical treatment with higher concentrations of topically applied AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.46b ~ d), leading to the loss of protective barrier, the inhibitory efficacy of the treatment decreased (Fig. 10.17). This is consistent with the decreased mean percentage of Ag detected on enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgNO₃ (0.96±0.12 %), compared to that detected on those topically treated with 2.36 M AgNO₃ (1.09±0.28 %) (Fig. 10.47). The structure loss should be due to the formation of Ag⁺ substituted enamel, whose susceptibility increased with increasing incorporation of Ag⁺ (Chapter 7). The proposed dose-response mechanism of AgNO₃ topical treatment on human enamel is shown schematically in Fig. 12.1.

![Figure 12.1 - Schematic representation of proposed dose-response inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgNO₃ on human enamel demineralisation. Following topical treatment with AgNO₃, both formation of Ag₃PO₄ and Ag⁺ substituted enamel increases with increasing concentration. After acid challenge, Ag₃PO₄ is reduced to metallic silver. The enamel surface with more Ag⁺ substituted enamel is more destructed. Further, some metallic silver is lost due to the loss of enamel structure.](image-url)
12.1.1 The Dose-response Effects of $\text{Ag}^+$ on the Dose-response Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatment with $\text{AgNO}_3$ on Enamel Demineralisation

In the ISE study, the accelerating enamel demineralisation effects of $\text{Ag}^+$ due to the formation of $\text{Ag}^+$ substituted enamel (Chapter 7) can be expected during $\text{AgNO}_3$ topical treatment on enamel, and, after re-immersion back into acid.

There was a log-linear relationship ($R^2 = 1.00$) between the mean PRCL_{enamel} and the concentration of $\text{AgNO}_3$ (Fig. 10.18), which is similar to the dose-response PRML_{enamel} of $\text{Ag}^+$ in solution reported in the SMR study (Fig. 7.4). This indicates that the dose-response effects of the topical treatment with $\text{AgNO}_3$ are associated with the accelerating enamel demineralisation effect of $\text{Ag}^+$ in the topically applied $\text{AgNO}_3$.

After re-immersing the enamel topically treated with $\text{AgNO}_3$ back into acid, the $[\text{Ag}^+]_{4h}$ increased with increasing concentration of $\text{AgNO}_3$ (Fig. 10.32). Further, Fig. 12.2 shows that a log-linear relationship was found between the mean PRCL_{enamel} of $\text{AgNO}_3$ topical treatment and the $[\text{Ag}^+]_{4h}$ ($R^2 = 0.74$) (Green line), which is similar to the dose-response PRML_{enamel} of $\text{Ag}^+$ in solution reported in the SMR study (Grey line). This indicates that the dose-response inhibitory of the $\text{AgNO}_3$ topical treatment is also associated with the accelerating enamel demineralisation effect of $\text{Ag}^+$ in the demineralisation solution.
Figure 12.2 - Comparison of the log-linear relationship between the mean PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of AgNO\textsubscript{3} topical treatment and the [Ag\textsuperscript{+}]	extsubscript{4h} (Green line), and the log-linear relationship between the mean PRML\textsubscript{enamel} of Ag\textsuperscript{+} and the [Ag\textsuperscript{+}] in solution (Grey line). Error bars show the standard errors.

However, the R\textsuperscript{2} value of the dose-response PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of [Ag\textsuperscript{+}]	extsubscript{4h} (R\textsuperscript{2} = 0.75) is lower than the R\textsuperscript{2} value of the dose-response PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of topically applied AgNO\textsubscript{3} (R\textsuperscript{2} = 1.00). Further, the slope value (= -39.67 \%/ppm) of the dose-response PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of [Ag\textsuperscript{+}]	extsubscript{4h} reported in the present ISE study (Green line) was much steeper than the slope value (= -2.32 \%/ppm) of the dose-response PRML\textsubscript{enamel} of Ag\textsuperscript{+} in solution reported in the SMR study (Grey line), (Fig. 12.2). Therefore, the dose-response inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with AgNO\textsubscript{3} was mainly due to the high [Ag\textsuperscript{+}] in the topical application agent (all [AgNO\textsubscript{3}] > 80000 ppm Ag\textsuperscript{+}) rather than the low [Ag\textsuperscript{+}] in the demineralisation solution (all [Ag\textsuperscript{+}]	extsubscript{4h} < 1 ppm Ag\textsuperscript{+}).

There are differences between the inhibitory efficacy (PRCL\textsubscript{enamel}) of AgNO\textsubscript{3} topical treatments observed in the present ISE study (Green line), and the theoretical inhibitory efficacy (PRML\textsubscript{enamel}) of [Ag\textsuperscript{+}]	extsubscript{4h} obtained from the dose-response PRML\textsubscript{enamel} of Ag\textsuperscript{+} in solution reported in the SMR study (Grey line) (Fig. 12.3). The difference is due to the topical applied AgNO\textsubscript{3}, which facilitates the formation of a protective barrier on the topically treated enamel. Further, the difference decreased with increasing concentration, which is due to the loss of enamel structure, leading to the loss of the protective barrier.
Figure 12.3— The difference between the inhibitory efficacy (PRCLenamel) of AgNO₃ (Green dots) observed in ISE study and the theoretical inhibitory efficacy (PRMLenamel) of [Ag+]₄h (Grey dots) obtained from dose-response PRMLenamel of Ag⁺ reported in the SMR study.

\[ y = (39.67)\ln(x) - 4.13 \]
\[ R^2 = 0.75 \]
\[ y = (2.32)\ln(x) - 1.17 \]
\[ R^2 = 1.00 \]
12.2 Dose-response Effects of Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F on Demineralisation of Human Enamel and Proposed Mechanistic Models

The Ca²⁺ ISE data (Fig. 10.19 and Fig. 10.21) showed that the mean PRCL<sub>enamel</sub> of AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F topical treatments increased with increasing concentrations. The SEM images also demonstrated similar dose-response (Fig. 10.46e ~ j). Only ripple-like demineralised lesions were observed on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 2.36 M and 3.16 M of AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.46f, g, i and j), whereas, demineralised holes were observed on the surfaces topically treated with 0.75 M AgF and 0.75 M Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.46e and h). No dose-response was observed in the enamel sections and the Knoop CSMH profiles (Fig. 10.56e ~ j and Fig. 10.57e ~ j), as the change in the inhibitory efficacy was too small.

The amount of cubic metallic silver particles (reduced from Ag₃PO₄) found on the enamel surfaces topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F increased with increasing concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.46e ~ j), leading to increased black staining observed on the enamel surfaces topically treated with higher concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.45). Further, the mean atomic percentages of Ag detected on the enamel surfaces also increased with increasing concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.49 and Fig. 10.50). All these findings indicate that the amount of metallic silver accumulated in the protective barrier with increasing concentration of topically applied AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F.

It is also noted that the amount of granular CaF₂ particles found on the enamel surfaces topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F increased with increasing concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.46e ~ j). Further, the mean atomic percentages of F detected on the enamel surfaces increased with increasing concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (Fig. 10.52 and Fig. 10.53). Also, the proportion of CaF₂ detected with ¹⁹F MAS-NMR in the powdered enamel samples topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F increased with increasing concentrations (Fig. 10.55). All these findings indicate that the amount of CaF₂
also accumulated in the protective barrier with increasing concentration of topically applied AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F.

As CaF$_2$ can act as a reservoir of F$^-$ for the formation of FHA (ten Cate, 1997) (Section 2.4), the amount of FHA should also accumulate in the protective barrier with increasing concentration of topically applied AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F. Even though, from the current $^{19}$F MAS-NMR spectra (Fig. 10.55), it was difficult to tell whether the proportion of FHA in the powdered enamel samples increased with increasing concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F due to the small amounts of FHA formed following the topical treatments, previous $^{19}$F MAS-NMR study has shown that the incorporation of fluoride into enamel mineral, forming FHA, increased with increasing [F$^-$] in the solution (Mohammed et al., 2013). In the present study, FHA was detected with $^{19}$F MAS-NMR in the powdered enamel treated with 0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Fig. 10.55), but no F was detected with EDX on the enamel surfaces topically with 0.75 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Fig. 10.53). This might be due to the detected limit of EDX, which has been proposed to be around 0.1 wt% (Goldstein et al., 2003).

The inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, and, the amounts of metallic silver (reduced from Ag$_3$PO$_4$), CaF$_2$ and FHA increased with increasing concentration. Therefore, the increased inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F is associated with the accumulation of the components in the protective barrier. The proposed dose-response mechanism of AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatment on human enamel is shown schematically in Fig. 12.4.
Figure 12.4 – Schematic representation of proposed dose-response inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on human enamel demineralisation. Following topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, the formation of Ag$_3$PO$_4$, CaF$_2$ and FHA increases with increasing concentration. After acid challenge, Ag$_3$PO$_4$ is reduced to metallic silver and CaF$_2$ is dissolved for further formation of FHA.

12.2.1 The Dose-response Effects of Ag$^+$ on the Dose-response Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatment with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on Enamel Demineralisation

In the ISE study, the accelerating enamel demineralisation effects of Ag$^+$ due to the formation of Ag$^+$ substituted enamel (Chapter 7) can be expected during AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatments on enamel, and, after re-immersion back into acid.

However, the direction of the log-linear relationships between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ and the concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Fig. 10.20 and Fig. 10.22) is different from the dose-response PRML$_{enamel}$ of Ag$^+$ in solution reported in the SMR study (Fig. 7.4). Further, after re-immersing the enamel topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F back into acid, there were no significant differences between the [Ag$^+$]$_{4h}$ following different concentrations AgF and
Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatments (Fig. 10.33 and Fig. 10.34). Fig. 12.5 and Fig. 12.6 show that there were no log-linear relationships between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of either AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatment, and their [Ag$^+$]$_{4h}$ ($R^2 = 0.09$ and $0.06$) (Red and Blue lines), which is different from the log-linear dose-response relationship between the mean PRML$_{enamel}$ of Ag$^+$ and the [Ag$^+$] reported in SMR study (Grey line). Therefore, the dose-response effects of Ag$^+$ did not have much influence on the dose-response inhibitory efficacy (PRCL$_{enamel}$) of the AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatments.

The difference between the dose-response PRCL$_{enamel}$ of AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatments and that of AgNO$_3$ topical treatment may be due to the involvement of F$^-$. As discussed in Sections 11.3.1, following topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, Ca$^{2+}$ lost from enamel due to the formation of Ag$^+$ substituted enamel can be preserved as CaF$_2$, and unstable Ag$^+$ substituted enamel will be replaced by more stable FHA (Robinson, 2009).

![Figure 12.5](image-url) - Comparison of the log-linear relationship between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of AgF topical treatment and the [Ag$^+$]$_{4h}$ (Red line) and the log-linear relationship between the mean PRML$_{enamel}$ of Ag$^+$ and the [Ag$^+$] in solution (Grey line). Error bars show the standard errors.
12.2.2 The Dose-response Effects of $F^-$ on the Dose-response Inhibitory Efficacy of the Topical Treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on Enamel Demineralisation

In the ISE study, the inhibiting enamel demineralisation effect of $F^-$ due to the formation of FHA and CaF$_2$ (Mohammed et al., 2014a) can be expected during topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on enamel, and, after re-immersion into acid.

The log-linear relationships between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ and the concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Fig. 10.20 and Fig. 10.22) are similar to the dose-response PRML$_{enamel}$ of $F^-$ in solution reported in the SMR study (Fig. 6.7b). This indicates that the dose-response effects of the topical treatment with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F are associated with the inhibiting enamel demineralisation effect of $F^-$ in the topically applied AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F.

After re-immersing the enamel topically treated with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F back into acid, the $[F^-]_{4h}$ increased with concentrations of AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Fig. 10.42 and Fig. 10.43). Further, Fig. 12.7 and Fig. 12.8 show that a log-linear relationship was found between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of topical treatments with...
AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, and their [F$^{-}$]$_{4h}$ (Red and Blue lines), which is similar to the dose-response PRML$_{enamel}$ of F$^{-}$ in solution reported in the SMR study (Purple line). This indicates that the dose-response effects of the topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F are also associated with the inhibiting enamel demineralisation effect of F$^{-}$ in the demineralisation solutions.

However, the $R^2$ values of the dose-response PRCL$_{enamel}$ of [F$^{-}$]$_{4h}$ ($R^2 = 0.78$ and 0.78) are lower than the $R^2$ values of the dose-response PRCL$_{enamel}$ of topically applied [AgF] and [Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F] ($R^2 = 1.00$). Further, the slope values (= 16.57 %/ppm and 42.25 %/ppm) of the dose-response PRCL$_{enamel}$ of [F$^{-}$]$_{4h}$ reported in the present ISE study (Red and Blue lines) were steeper than the slope value (= 11.10 %/ppm) of the dose-response PRCL$_{enamel}$ of F$^{-}$ in solution reported in the SMR study (Purple line) (Fig. 12.7 and Fig. 12.8). Therefore, the dose-response inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F was mainly due to the high [F$^{-}$] in the topical application agents (all [AgF] and [Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F] > 14250 ppm F$^{-}$) rather than the low [F$^{-}$] in the demineralisation solutions (all [F$^{-}$]$_{4h}$ < 1 ppm F$^{-}$).

**Figure 12.7** - Comparison of the log-linear relationship between the mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ of AgF topical treatment and the [F$^{-}$]$_{4h}$ (Red line) and the log-linear relationship between the mean PRML$_{enamel}$ of F$^{-}$ and the [F$^{-}$] in solution (Purple line). Error bars show the standard errors.
Figure 12.8 - Comparison of the log-linear relationship between the mean PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of Ag[\text{NH}_3]^2\text{F} topical treatment and the [$F$]\textsubscript{4h} (Blue line) and the log-linear relationship between the mean PRML\textsubscript{enamel} of $F^-$ and the [$F$] in solution (Purple line). Error bars show the standard errors.

There are differences between the inhibitory efficacy (PRCL\textsubscript{enamel}) of AgF and Ag[\text{NH}_3]^2\text{F} topical treatments observed in the present ISE study (Red and Blue lines), and the theoretical inhibitory efficacy (PRML\textsubscript{enamel}) of [$F$]\textsubscript{4h} obtained from the dose-response PRML\textsubscript{enamel} of $F^-$ in solution reported in the SMR study (Purple line) (Fig. 12.9 and Fig. 12.10). The differences are due to the topical applied AgF and Ag[\text{NH}_3]^2\text{F}, which facilitate the formation of a protective barrier on the topically treated enamel. Further, the differences increased with increasing concentrations, which is due to the accumulation of components in the protective barrier.
Figure 12.9 - The difference between the inhibitory efficacy (PRCL\text{enamel}) of AgF (Red dots) observed in ISE study and the theoretical inhibitory efficacy (PRML\text{enamel}) of [F\text{-}]\text{4h} (Purple dots) obtained from dose-response PRML\text{enamel} of F reported in the SMR study.

Figure 12.10 - The difference between the inhibitory efficacy (PRCL\text{enamel}) of Ag[ Nh\text{3}]\text{2}F (Blue dots) observed in ISE study and the theoretical inhibitory efficacy (PRML\text{enamel}) of [F\text{-}]\text{4h} (Purple dots) obtained from dose-response PRML\text{enamel} of F reported in the SMR study.
12.3 Conclusions

In conclusion, the dose-response inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgNO$_3$ on human enamel demineralisation is associated with the substitution of Ca$^{2+}$ in enamel mineral by Ag$^+$. Whereas, the dose-response inhibitory mechanisms of topical treatments with AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on human enamel demineralisation are associated with the increased release of F$^-$ from the topically treated enamel surfaces, and the accumulation of the components in the protective barrier.

For AgNO$_3$, the dose-response effects of Ag$^+$ influence the dose-response inhibitory efficacy. Whereas, for AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, only dose-response effects of F$^-$ play a major role in the dose-response inhibitory efficacy.
PART V: DISCUSSION, CONCLUSIONS, FUTURE WORK AND CLINICAL RELEVANCE
Chapter 13 DISCUSSION

13.1 Comparison of Effects of Topical Treatments with Silver Compounds on Demineralisation of HAP Discs and Human Enamel

This study demonstrated the effects of topical treatments with silver nitrate (AgNO₃), silver fluoride (AgF), silver diammine fluoride (SDF; Ag[NH₃]₂F) and Silver Capsule of Riva Star (3.16 M SDF, SDI Ltd, Australia) (Riva-SC) on the inhibition of demineralisation of hydroxyapatite (HAP) discs (Chapter 8) and human enamel (Chapter 10). Even though HAP discs have been accepted as a good model for human enamel in many demineralisation studies (Anderson et al., 2004a; do Amaral et al., 2016; Jones et al., 2013; Kosoric et al., 2010), it is compositionally and structurally different from human enamel (Section 1.3).

This section aims to compare the effects of topical treatments with silver compounds (3.16 M) on the demineralisation of HAP discs and human enamel.

13.1.1 Before Topical Treatments with Silver Compounds

In the ISE study (Chapter 8 and 10), before topical treatment with each silver compound, the release of Ca²⁺ from both HAP discs and human enamel in the demineralisation solution was linear with time (Fig. 8.4 ~ Fig. 8.8 and Fig. 10.5 ~ Fig. 10.15). However, the rates of Ca²⁺ release from demineralising human enamel (≈ 0.030 mM/h) (Table 10.7) were faster than those from demineralising HAP discs (≈ 0.010 mM/h) (Table 8.7). This should be due to the presence of carbonate in human enamel, acting as a destabilising agent (Mukundan et al., 1999) (Section 1.3).
13.1.2 Following Topical Treatments with Silver Compounds

Immediately following topical treatments with all silver compounds (AgNO$_3$, AgF, Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC) on both HAP discs and human enamel, yellow staining was observed (Fig. 8.16, Fig. 10.44 and Fig. 10.45), suggesting the formation of yellow Ag$_3$PO$_4$ (Lewis, 1920). Further, in the treatment groups of fluoride-containing silver compounds (AgF, Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F and Riva-SC), CaF$_2$ and FHA were detected in the powder samples of both HAP and human enamel (Fig. 8.21 and Fig. 10.55). This suggests that the reaction products formed following topical treatments with silver compounds on both HAP discs and human enamel are the same.

13.1.3 After Re-immersion of Topically Treated HAP Discs and Human Enamel into Acids

![Graph showing PRCL for enamel and HAP after re-immersion](image)

*Figure 13.1 – Mean PRCL$_{enamel}$ and mean PRCL$_{HAP}$ of all treatment groups.*

After re-immersing the HAP discs and human enamel topically treated with DW, the rate of Ca$^{2+}$ release from demineralising HAP discs was decreased (Fig. 8.4) due to the removal of softened HAP surfaces and the exposure of intact deeper
HAP layers (Section 9.1), whereas, the rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release from demineralising human enamel was increased (Fig. 10.5) due to the removal of softened enamel surfaces and the exposure of more soluble deeper enamel layers (Section 11.1). Therefore, the abrasion effects of using a micro-brush during topical treatments on HAP discs and human enamel are different. This should be the reason why PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of silver compound treatment group were all slightly lower than the PRCL\textsubscript{HAP} (Fig. 13.1).

The [Ag\(^{+}\)]\textsubscript{4h} of both HAP disc and human enamel treatment groups were similar (Fig. 13.2). However, the [F\(^{-}\)]\textsubscript{4h} of human enamel treatment groups were all slightly higher than those of HAP disc treatment groups (Fig. 13.3). This should result from the minor additional amounts of fluoride in the human enamel, which is an unavoidable interference even though the superficial layers of enamel abundant in fluoride were removed before the study.

![Figure 13.2 – [Ag\(^{+}\)]\textsubscript{4h} of enamel and HAP disc treatment groups.](image-url)
13.1.4 After Removal of HAP Discs and Human Enamel Topically Treated with Silver Compounds from Acids

After removing the HAP discs and human enamel topically treated with DW, the SEM images showed pores on the demineralised HAP disc surfaces (Fig. 8.17a), whereas, hollow enamel cores were found on the demineralised enamel surfaces (Fig. 10.46a). This results from the difference in the structures of these two sample types (Section 1.2.2 and Section 1.3). Demineralised surfaces of human enamel are more irregular than those of HAP discs due to the compositional variation in the human enamel (Section 1.2.1).

On both HAP discs and human enamel, cubic metallic silver particles were found on the surfaces topically treated with silver compounds (AgNO₃, AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC). Further, additional granular CaF₂ particles were found on the surfaces topically treated with fluoride-containing silver compounds (AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC) (Fig. 8.17b ~ e and Fig. 10.46d, g, j, k).

Elemental Ag was detected on both HAP disc and human enamel surfaces topically treated with silver compounds (AgNO₃, AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC) (Fig. 8.18 and Fig. 10.47). The ratios of the mean atomic percentages of Ag detected on both HAP disc and enamel surfaces topically treated with these silver
compounds were the same; AgF Tx > Riva-SC Tx > Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx > AgNO₃ Tx. However, the mean atomic percentages of Ag detected on the HAP disc surfaces were all higher than those detected on the similarly treated enamel (Fig. 13.4). This could be due to that the metallic silver particles deposited on the HAP discs (~ 3 μm) were larger than those (~ 1.5 μm) on the enamel, and can be more easily detected by EDX (Section 8.4.5 and Section 10.4.5). The larger size of metallic silver particles on the HAP discs may be due to that the evenly demineralised HAP disc surfaces made the exposure of Ag₃PO₄ deposits to light and heat easier than the irregular demineralised enamel surfaces.

![Graph](image.png)

**Figure 13.4 - Mean percentages of Ag detected on HAP disc and human enamel surfaces.**

Elemental F was detected on both HAP disc and human enamel surfaces topically treated with fluoride-containing silver compounds (AgF, Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC) (Fig. 8.19 and Fig. 10.51). The ratios of the mean atomic percentages of F detected on both HAP disc and enamel surfaces topically treated with these fluoride-containing silver compounds were the same; AgF Tx > Riva-SC Tx > Ag[NH₃]₂F Tx. However, the mean atomic percentages of F detected on the enamel surfaces topically treated with 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M Ag[NH₃]₂F and Riva-SC (> 15 %) were all much higher than those detected on the similarly treated HAP discs (< 2 %) (Fig. 13.5). This could be due to the exposure of more soluble
deeper layers of human enamel by the abrasion effects of topical treatments. As the formation of CaF$_2$ requires slight dissolution of the enamel surfaces in order to provide the necessary Ca$^{2+}$ (Buzalaf et al., 2011) (Section 2.4), more soluble enamel mineral favours more CaF$_2$ formation.

Therefore, as there was much more CaF$_2$ in the protective barriers formed on the enamel surfaces topically treated with fluoride-containing silver compounds (AgF, Ag[NH$_3$_]$_2$F and Riva-SC) than those formed on the HAP discs, the inhibitory efficacy from the enamel protective barriers should be much higher than those from the HAP disc protective barrier. This explains why even though the abrasion effects accelerated the Ca$^{2+}$ release from enamel by 10.61±2.39 %, the PRCL$_{enamel}$ of these fluoride-containing silver compound treatment groups were still similar to the PRCL$_{HAP}$ (Fig. 13.1).

![Figure 13.5](image-url) – Mean percentages of F detected on HAP disc and human enamel surfaces.
13.2 Clinical Implications of the Dose-response Effects of Topical Treatments with Silver Compounds on Demineralisation of Human Enamel

In the present study, the protocol of topical treatments on human enamel followed the one mostly recommended to be used in the clinical practice (Crystal et al., 2017). Further, the concentrations of the silver compounds, including 0.75 M, 2.36 M and 3.16 M, were the concentrations used in the commercial products (Fung et al., 2013; SDI, 2016a) (Section 3.4.2).

![Figure 13.6 – Dose-response effects of topical treatments with AgNO₃ (Green line), AgF (Red line) and Ag[NH₃]₂F (Blue line) on demineralisation of human enamel.](image)

13.2.1 Topical Treatments with Different Concentrations of AgNO₃ on Demineralisation of Human Enamel

As the PRCL\textsubscript{enamel} of topical treatment with 3.16 M AgNO₃ on enamel demineralisation was 0.0±5.3 % (Fig. 10.17), 3.16 M was a “threshold”, at which concentration the topical treatment cannot exert any further inhibitory efficacy on demineralisation. Therefore, the only cariostatic effect of the 3.16 M AgNO₃ topical treatment on enamel caries will be the antibacterial properties of AgNO₃.
On the other hand, as the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatments with 0.75 M and 2.36 M AgNO₃ was 21.9±3.2 % and 4.6±5.9 % observed (Fig. 10.17), both inhibitory efficacy and antibacterial properties can contribute to the cariostatic effect following topical treatments with these concentrations of AgNO₃. However, the PRCL enamel of 2.36 M AgNO₃ topical treatment was not significantly higher than that of 3.16 M AgNO₃. Therefore, the inhibitory efficacy of 2.36 M AgNO₃ topical treatments may also be negligible. An in vitro study found that 5 min immersion of human enamel in 2.36 M AgNO₃ did not inhibit the demineralisation of enamel at pH 4.4 (Liu et al., 2012b).

The inhibitory efficacy of AgNO₃ topical treatment increases with decreasing concentration (Fig. 13.6). Further, as most of the cariogenic bacteria can be inhibited by 20 ppm Ag⁺, the application of 0.75 M AgNO₃ (81000 ppm Ag⁺) is unnecessary. Therefore, AgNO₃ with concentrations lower than 0.75 M can be applied in the topical treatment on enamel caries to exert antibacterial properties and optimal inhibitory efficacy at the same time.

13.2.2 Topical Treatments with Different Concentrations of AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F on Demineralisation of Human Enamel

The PRCL enamel of topical treatments with fluoride-containing silver compounds (AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F) were much higher than that of AgNO₃ (Fig. 10.16). Therefore, fluoride-containing silver compounds used in the clinical practice can exert both pronounced inhibitory efficacy of enamel demineralisation and antibacterial properties.

Ag[NH₃]₂F is one of the most popular fluoride-containing silver compounds used in the clinical practice (Horst et al., 2016), which has a wide concentration range of commercial products available (Fung et al., 2013; SDI, 2016a). The Ag[NH₃]₂F product with the lowest concentration (Saforide 3.8%, Tokyo Seiyaku Kasei Co. Ltd, 4484 ppm F⁻) contains fluoride concentration similar to that of fluoride dentifrice (100 ~ 1500 ppm F⁻) (Mohammed et al., 2014a), whereas, the
Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F product with the highest concentration (Riva Star, SDI Ltd, 60000 ppm F$^-$) contains fluoride concentration much higher than that of fluoride varnish (~22000 ppm F$^-$) (Hazelrigg et al., 2003). As the inhibitory efficacy of the topical treatment with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F increases with increasing concentration (Fig. 13.6), concentrations of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F higher than 3.16 M (60000 ppm F$^-$) can be used to optimise the inhibitory efficacy of the topical treatment.

However, the safety concerns about the extremely high F$^-$ concentration in the silver compounds have been expressed (Gotjamanos, 1997; Gotjamanos and Afonso, 1997; Gotjamanos and Orton, 1998). Even though a previous study has proposed that the concentrations of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F products used in clinical practice is hundreds times less than the lethal dose of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F by oral administration (520 mg/kg) (Horst et al., 2016), some patients have reported tooth pain, gum pain, gum swelling and gum bleaching after being treated with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Duangthip et al., 2018). Therefore, high concentration fluoride-containing silver compounds should be used with caution.
Chapter 14 CONCLUSIONS, FUTURE WORK AND CLINICAL RELEVANCE

14.1 Conclusions

The conclusions from this study are as follows:

1. Real-time Ca$^{2+}$ ISEs can be used in *in vitro* study for quantifying the demineralisation inhibitory efficacy of inhibitors by real-time monitoring demineralisation kinetics before and after the treatment.

2. There is a dose-response effect of Ag$^+$ on the demineralisation of human enamel. The accelerating effect of Ag$^+$ on demineralisation increased with increasing concentration. Further, a log-linear relationship was found between the inhibitory efficacy and the concentration of Ag$^+$ in the solution.

3. Topical treatments with silver compounds, including AgNO$_3$, AgF and Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F, inhibited the demineralisation of hydroxyapatite (HAP) discs and human enamel. The inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgNO$_3$ is associated with; 1) the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag$_3$PO$_4$. Whereas, the inhibitory mechanism of topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F is associated with; 1) the release of F$^-$ from the topically treated dental mineral surfaces, 2) the formation of a protective barrier composed of Ag$_3$PO$_4$, CaF$_2$ and FHA. Further, the abrasion effects of the topical treatments inhibited the demineralisation of HAP discs but accelerated the demineralisation of human enamel.

4. The inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with AgNO$_3$ on human enamel demineralisation decreased with increasing concentration due to; 1) substitution of Ca$^{2+}$ in enamel mineral by Ag$^+$, which destabilises the treated enamel surfaces. Whereas, the inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F increased with increasing concentration due to; 1) the increased release of F$^-$.
from the topically treated enamel surfaces, 2) the accumulation of the components in the protective barrier on the treated enamel surfaces. Further, a log-linear relationship between the dose-response inhibitory efficacy of topical treatment with AgNO$_3$, AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F on demineralisation of human enamel and the topically applied concentration of AgNO$_3$, AgF or Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F was found.

5. The effects of topical treatments with Silver Capsule of Riva Star (SDI Ltd, Australia) on the demineralisation of HAP discs and human enamel are similar to those of topical treatments with laboratory-prepared 3.16 M Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F.
14.2 Future Work

The current in vitro study was carried out under conditions without any effects of the physiological factors in the oral environment. This allowed the strict chemical control of individual variables of multi-factorial diseases like dental caries and dental erosion. However, physiological factors in the in vivo situation, including dietary habits, personal oral hygiene conditions, the functions of salivary glands, and a pellicle coating, also influence caries and erosion progression (Hunter, 1988; Kidd, 2005). Therefore, in order to fully understand the effects of topical treatments with silver compounds, further studies are required to investigate the additional effects of these physiological factors. Furthermore, the effects of a dynamic pH cycling process need to be considered in order to simulate in situ conditions.

Hydroxyapatite (HAP) discs were used as enamel analogues in this study in order to avoid inhomogeneities from human enamel. Bovine enamel could be another choice to be used in the future study (Laurance-Young et al., 2011), which has more uniform composition than human enamel but more physiological features than HAP discs (Mellberg, 1992). Further, only one protocol of topical treatment with silver compound was used in the present study. Even though the protocol has been proposed to be the optimum for cariostatic effectiveness (Crystal et al., 2017), other delivery protocols should be investigated. For example, University of California San Francisco (UCSF) proposed that the application time of Ag[NH₃]₂F should be more than 1 min, followed by rinsing of the treated lesion (Horst et al., 2016). Even though concerns have been expressed about losing effectiveness by the rinsing procedure (Horst, 2018), the discrepancy between the inhibitory efficacies exerted by these two protocols could be compared using the real-time ISE methodology. Further, by modifying the protocol used in the study, a novel protocol, which exerts higher inhibitory efficacy might be found.

An inhibitory efficacy up to 65 % of topical treatment with AgF or Ag[NH₃]₂F was found with increasing concentrations (up to 3.16 M) in the present study, but higher concentrations could be used in the future dose-response study to
measure optimal inhibitory efficacy. Further, the inhibitory efficacy obtained was based on 4 h demineralisation only, and so longer periods could be used to investigate the inhibitory efficacy over longer time periods. For example, as the secretion of saliva is lowest during 8 h sleep, which increases caries risk (Dawes, 2008), an 8 h demineralisation period can be used.
14.3 Clinical Relevance

In clinical practice, topical treatment with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F is a better choice over AgNO$_3$ and AgF used for the management of dental caries. Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatment has higher inhibitory efficacy on enamel demineralisation than AgNO$_3$ and is able to stabilise the Ag$^+$. Biannual application of 38 wt% (2.36 M) Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F is the most effective protocol for treating dental caries (Duangthip et al., 2017; Fung et al., 2016; Fung et al., 2018) (Section 3.4.2). However, as this study has reported, the inhibitory efficacy of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F increases with increasing concentration, so there is a potential that annual applications of Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F with concentrations higher than 2.36 M will be sufficient to exert similar cariostatic effects on human enamel.

However, the black staining remains an aesthetic problem. SSKI has been introduced, which can be applied to remove the black staining of the lesions topically treated with Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F (Ngo et al., 2002) (Section 3.4). Future clinical trials are required to investigate whether the black staining of the treated lesions can be effectively and permanently removed by using SSKI without compromising the inhibitory efficacy of the Ag[NH$_3$]$_2$F topical treatment.
PART VI: REFERENCES


BOYE, A. 1964. *The structure and development of mammalian enamel.* PhD.


LINGAWI, H. S. 2012. *EFFECT OF DIVALENT METAL CATIONS ON HYDROXYAPATITE DISSOLUTION KINETICS RELEVANT TO DENTAL CARIES AND EROSION*. PhD, Queen Mary University of London.


LUSSI, A. 2006a. *Dental Erosion From Diagnosis to Therapy*, Switzerland, S. Karger AG, P.O. Box, CH-4009 Basel.
LUSSI, A. 2006b. *Dental Erosion From Diagnosis to Therapy*, S. Karger AG, P.O. Box, CH–4009 Basel (Switzerland).


MAYA, DOYCHINOVA, VESSELIN, KUSSOVSKI, TSVETAN, TONCHEV, SLAVCHO & DIMITROV 2015. PHOTODYNAMIC INACTIVATION OF HUMAN DENTAL BIOFILM ISOLATED STREPTOCOCCUS MUTANS WITH 2 PHOTOSENSITIZERS – AN IN VITRO STUDY. *Scripta Scientifica Medica*, 47.


ROBERT, J. D. 1959. *Nuclear magnetic Resonance applications to organic chemistry*, McGRAW - HILL BOOK COMPANY, INC. NEW YORK, TORONTO, LONDON.


SINGH, B., DUBEY, A. K., KUMAR, S., SAHA, N., BASU, B. & GUPTA, R. 2011. In vitro biocompatibility and antimicrobial activity of wet chemically prepared Ca10−xAgx(PO4)6(OH)2 (0.0≤x≤0.5) hydroxyapatites. Materials Science and Engineering: C, 31, 1320-1329.


ZEITCHEK & ANTHONY, M. 2013. All solid-state-ion-selective electrodes for real-time measurement of relevant physiological phenomena. M.S., Purdue University.


PART VII: APPENDIXES
## Appendix A: Tables of SDF studies

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Studies (year/Sites)</th>
<th>Caries effect studied</th>
<th>Subjects/Dentitions</th>
<th>Durations</th>
<th>Groups compared (*application times)</th>
<th>Main findings</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| McDonald and Sheiham (1994/UK) (McDonald and Sheiham, 1994) | Arrest | 52 children (2-9 years old)/primary | 18 months | Gp 1: SnF₂  
Gp 2: SDF/SnF₂  
Gp 3: Minimal preparation + SDF/SnF₂ + composite resin  
Gp 4: Minimal preparation + composite resin  
Gp 5: no treatment | Caries in progress (%):  
Gp 1: 46.5 %  
Gp 2: 26.6 %  
Gp 3: 5.2 %  
Gp 4: 11.1 %  
Gp 5: 53.0 %  
Caries can be treated in a non-traumatic way. |
| Gotjamanos T. (1996/Australia) (Gotjamanos, 1996) | Arrest | 55 carious primary teeth (from 6-13-year-olds)/primary | 3-56 months | 55 carious dentins treated with 50.9% SDF and GIC | SDF treatment for deep caries does not affect pulp vitality. |
| Lo et al. (2001/China) (Lo et al., 2001) | Arrest and prevention | 375 children (3-5 years old)/primary | 18 months | Gp 1: annual 38% SDF  
Gp 2: annual 38% SDF  
Gp 3: 3 monthly NaF (5%) + carious tissue removal  
Gp 4: 3-monthly NaF (5%)  
Gp 5: no treatment | Mean no. of new carious surfaces/arrest carious surfaces:  
Gp 1: 0.4/2.8  
Gp 2: 0.4/3.0  
Gp 3: 0.8/1.7  
Gp 4: 0.6/1.5  
Gp 5: 1.2/1.0  
1. 38% SDF is more effective than 5% NaF in preventing and arresting caries.  
2. Carious tissue removal is unnecessary for SDF treatment. |
| Chu et al. (2002/China) (Chu et al., 2002) | Arrest | 375 children (3-5 years old)/primary | 30 months | Gp 1: annual 38% SDF  
Gp 2: annual 38% SDF  
Gp 3: 3 monthly 5% NaF + carious tissue removal | Mean no. of arrest carious surfaces:  
Gp 1: 2.5  
Gp 2: 2.8  
Gp 3: 1.5  
Gp 4: 1.5  
Gp 5: 1.3  
SDF is effective in caries arrest in primary teeth. |
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Study (Year/Location)</th>
<th>Intervention</th>
<th>Participants</th>
<th>Follow-Up</th>
<th>Results/Findings</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Llodra et al. (2005/Cuba)</td>
<td>Arrest and prevention</td>
<td>425 children (≥ 6 years old)/primary and permanent 1st molars</td>
<td>36 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: biannual 38% SDF&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: no treatment (*3 min)&lt;br&gt; Mean no. of new carious surfaces (primary/permanent 1st molars):&lt;br&gt; Gp 1: 0.29/0.37&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: 1.43/1.06 SDF is effective for caries reduction in primary teeth and first permanent molars.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Braga et al. (2009/Brazil)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>22 children/permanent 1st molars</td>
<td>30 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: cross-tooth-brushing technique (CTT)&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: 3 time weekly 10% SDF&lt;br&gt; Gp 3: GIC sealant (*3 min)&lt;br&gt; All treatments are effective in control occlusal incipient caries.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yee et al. (2009/Nepal)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>976 children (3-9 years old)/primary</td>
<td>24 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: 38% SDF/tannic acid&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: 38% SDF&lt;br&gt; Gp 3: 12% SDF&lt;br&gt; Gp 4: no treatment (*2 min)&lt;br&gt; Mean no. of arrest carious surfaces:&lt;br&gt; Gp 1: 2.2&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: 2.1&lt;br&gt; Gp 3: 1.5&lt;br&gt; Gp 4: 1.0&lt;br&gt; 38% SDF is more effective than 12% SDF in caries arrest.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zhi et al. (2012/China)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>212 children (3-4 years old)/primary</td>
<td>24 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: annual 38% SDF&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: biannual 38% SDF&lt;br&gt; Gp 3: annual GIC&lt;br&gt; Caries arrest rates:&lt;br&gt; Gp 1: 79%&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: 91%&lt;br&gt; Gp 3: 82%&lt;br&gt; Increasing application frequency to biannual can enhance the caries arrest rate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dos Santos et al. (2012/Brazil)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>91 children/Primary</td>
<td>12 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: 30% SDF&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: GIC (*3 min)&lt;br&gt; SDF was more effective than GIC (RR = 38.6%) for caries arrest.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Liu et al. (2012/China)</td>
<td>Prevention</td>
<td>501 children (mean age 9.1 years)/permanent 1st molars</td>
<td>24 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: Resin sealant&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: biannual 5% NaF&lt;br&gt; Gp 3: annual 38% SDF&lt;br&gt; Gp 4: placebo control&lt;br&gt; Proportions of pit/fissure sites with dentin caries:&lt;br&gt; Gp 1: 1.6%&lt;br&gt; Gp 2: 2.4%&lt;br&gt; Gp 3: 2.2%&lt;br&gt; Gp 4: 4.6%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Study (Year/Country)</td>
<td>Treatment</td>
<td>Age Group</td>
<td>Duration</td>
<td>Intervention</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chu et al. (2014/Hong Kong) (Chu et al., 2014)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>A 14-year-old Chinese boy/permanent (rampant caries)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Patient with rampant caries was treated with 38% SDF, followed by provisional crown restoration.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duangthip et al. (2016/Hong Kong) (Duangthip et al., 2016)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>304 children (3-4 years old)/primary</td>
<td>18 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: annual 38% SDF Gp 2: 3 weekly 38% SDF Gp 3: 3 weekly 5% NaF (*10 sec)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fung et al. (2016/China) (Fung et al., 2016)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>888 children (3-4 years old)/primary</td>
<td>18 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: annual 12% SDF Gp 2: biannual 12% SDF Gp 3: annual 38% SDF Gp 4: biannual 38% SDF</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duangthip et al. (2017/Hong Kong) (Duangthip et al., 2017)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>371 children (3-4 years old)/primary</td>
<td>30 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: annual 38% SDF Gp 2: 3 weekly 38% SDF Gp 3: 3 weekly 5% NaF (*10 sec)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fung et al. (2018/China) (Fung et al., 2018)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>888 children (3-4 years old)/primary</td>
<td>30 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: annual 12% SDF Gp 2: biannual 12% SDF Gp 3: annual 38% SDF Gp 4: biannual 38% SDF</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milgrom et al. (2018/USA) (Milgrom et al., 2018)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>66 children (2-6 years old)/primary</td>
<td>14 ~ 21 days</td>
<td>Gp 1: 38% SDF Gp 2: placebo</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Topical 38% silver diamine fluoride is effective and safe in arresting cavities in preschool children.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Studies (year/Sites)</th>
<th>Caries effect studied</th>
<th>Subjects/Dentitions</th>
<th>Durations</th>
<th>Groups compared</th>
<th>Main findings</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tan et al. (2010/ Hong Kong)(Tan et al., 2010)</td>
<td>Prevention</td>
<td>306 elders (mean age 78.8 ± 6.2 years)/permanent roots</td>
<td>3 years</td>
<td>Gp 1: oral hygiene instruction (OHI) Gp 2: OHI + 3-monthly chlorhexidine (CHX)</td>
<td>New root caries surfaces: Gp 1: 2.5 Gp 2: 1.1 Gp 3: 0.9 Gp 4: 0.7 CHX, 5% NaF and 38% SDF were all more effective than OHI alone.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zhang et al. (2013/ Hong Kong)(Zhang et al., 2013)</td>
<td>Arrest and prevention</td>
<td>277 elders (60-89 years old)/permanent roots</td>
<td>24 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: OHI Gp 2: OHI + annual 38% SDF Gp 3: OHI + annual 38% SDF + biannual oral health education (OHE)</td>
<td>New/arrested root caries surfaces: Gp 1: 1.33/0.04 Gp 2: 1.00/0.28 Gp 3: 0.70/0.33 Annual 38% SDF together with biannual OHE is effective in preventing and arrest caries.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Li et al. (2016/ Hong Kong)(Li et al., 2016)</td>
<td>Arrest</td>
<td>83 elders (mean age 72.2 ± 5.8 years)/permanent roots</td>
<td>30 months</td>
<td>Gp 1: no treatment Gp 2: 38% SDF Gp 3: 38% SDF/KI</td>
<td>Root caries arrest rates: Gp 1: 45% Gp 2: 90% Gp 3: 93% 1. 38% SDF application with or without KI application is effective in root caries arrest. 2. KI application does not reduce black staining of SDF in the long term.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Studies (year)</td>
<td>Methodologies</td>
<td>Main findings</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------------------------</td>
<td>-------------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chu et al. (2008)</td>
<td>Carious primary teeth treated with either 38% SDF or 5% NaF were extracted to undergo Knoop hardness number (KHN) measurement.</td>
<td>The median KHN of arrested lesions (range, 20-46 or 196-451 MPa) were greater than those of soft lesions (range, 5-20, or 49-196 MPa) in the outer 25-200 µm.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lou et al. (2011)</td>
<td>Hydroxyapatite (HAP) powders mixed with 38% SDF, NaF or AgNO$_3$ were inspected with SEM, energy-dispersive X-ray analysis (EDX), and electron diffraction (ED).</td>
<td>Compounds formed on treated surfaces: SDF: CaF$_2$ and Ag(s) NaF: NaF globules AgNO$_3$: Ag$_3$PO$_4$ (turns black immediately)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Liu et al. (2012)</td>
<td>Sound premolars treated with AgF, KF, AgNO$_3$ or water, were subjected to demineralisation for 7 days before being inspected with micro-computed tomography (Micro-CT).</td>
<td>Topical applications of AgF and KF inhibited enamel demineralisation, while AgNO$_3$ application did not.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mei et al. (2013)</td>
<td>Dentin caries generated by multi-species biofilms (Streptococcus mutans, Streptococcus sobrinus, Lactobacillus acidophilus, Lactobacillus rhamnosus and Actinomyces naeslundii) were treated with either 38% SDF or water, and were incubated in the artificial mouth for 21 days.</td>
<td>1. 38% SDF inhibits multi-species cariogenic biofilm formation on dentin carious lesions. 2. The hardness and percentages of calcium and phosphorus of SDF treated samples from the outermost 50µm were higher.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mei et al. (2014)</td>
<td>Carious primary teeth treated with 38% SDF were inspected with Micro-CT, EDX, SEM, and transmission electron microscopy (TEM).</td>
<td>A highly remineralised zone rich in calcium and phosphate was found on the 38% SDF treated cavitated dentinal lesion.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Punyanirun et al. (2018)</td>
<td>Incipient caries on proximal surfaces of premolars were treated with 38% SDF before undergoing bacterial pH-cycling for 5 days. Micro-CT then was used for mineral density evaluation.</td>
<td>Compared to the use of 1000 ppm fluoride toothpaste alone, the adjunctive use of 38% SDF enhances the remineralization of initial carious lesions based on mineral density, depth, and remineralization percentage.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mei et al. (2017)</td>
<td>Calcium phosphate with different SDF concentrations (0.38, 1.52, 2.66, 3.80 mg/mL) were incubated at 37 °C for 24 h. The shape and organization of the crystals were examined by bright-field transmission electron microscopy and electron diffraction. Unit cell parameters of the obtained crystals were determined with powder X-ray diffraction. The vibrational and rotational modes of phosphate groups were analysed with Raman microscopy.</td>
<td>The results suggested that SDF reacted with calcium and phosphate ions and produced fluorohydroxyapatite (FAH).</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Studies (year)</td>
<td>Methodologies</td>
<td>Main findings</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------------------------------</td>
<td>------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knight et al. (2005) (Knight et al., 2005)</td>
<td>Demineralized dentine discs treated with 50.9% SDF, 50.9% SDF/KI and KI were incubated in medium of S. mutans for 14 days. Afterwards, optical density of the medium chambers was measured to determine bacterial penetration and growth.</td>
<td>S. mutans migrated through all dentine discs. However, the samples treated with 50.9% SDF and SDF/KI had significantly lower optical densities.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knight et al. (2007) (Knight et al., 2007)</td>
<td>Dentin discs with or without demineralisation, were treated with 50.9% SDF/KI. Next, were incubated with S. mutans for 14 days. Electron probe microanalysis (EPMA) and SEM were then used to inspect the samples. Bacterial growth was monitored by taking optical density readings.</td>
<td>SDF/KI can inhibit biofilm formation composed of S. mutans.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knight et al. (2009) (Knight et al., 2009)</td>
<td>Demineralized dentin disks treated with either 50.9% SDF or 50.9% SDF/KI were incubated in S. mutans before being inspected by scanning microscopy (SEM) and electron probe microanalysis (EPMA).</td>
<td>The inhibition of S. mutans might be due to the presence of silver and fluoride in the outer layer (up to 450 µm) of SDF and SDF/KI treated samples, which make it more resistant to demineralisation.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Almeida et al. (2011) (de Almeida Lde et al., 2011)</td>
<td>Antibacterial effects of different concentrations of SDF were studies using an agar diffusion method.</td>
<td>Both 12% and 30% can inhibit S. mutans.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| Chu et al. (2012) (Chu et al., 2012) | Demineralized dentine blocks were incubated with either S. mutans or A. naeslundii to be treated with 38% SDF. Lesions were then assessed by microhardness testing (MHT), EDX and Fourier transform infrared spectroscopy (FTIR). | 1. 38% SDF possesses anti-microbial activity against cariogenic biofilm of S. mutans or A. naeslundii, which inhibit the demineralisation.  
2. The hardness and percentages of calcium and phosphorus of SDF treated samples. |
| Mei et al. (2013) (Mei et al., 2013b) | Carious lesions were created in dentine blocks by inoculating with dual-species biofilm (S. mutans and Lactobacillus acidophilus). They were then treated with either 38% SDF or water before being incubated at 37°C for 7 days. The biofilms were evaluated by colony forming units (CFU), SEM, and confocal microscopy (CLSM), while the carious lesion was inspected with XRD, Fourier transform infrared spectroscopy (FTIR) and immune-labeling. | 38% SDF had antimicrobial activity against the cariogenic biofilms composed of S. mutans and Lactobacillus acidophilus. |
| Shah et al. (2013) (Shah et al., 2013) | S. mutans counts in the mouths of children treated with 38% SDF, fluoride varnish or APF gel. All subjects were evaluated at 72 h, 6th, 12th, and 18th months of follow-up. | 38% SDF is more effective in inhibiting S. mutans than fluoride varnish and APF gel in vivo.                                                      |
| Targino et al. (2014) (Targino et al., 2014) | Evaluate the antimicrobial and cytotoxic activity of 38% SDF. The minimum inhibition concentration (MIC) was evaluated by the spectrophotometric method.                                                                 | The MIC and MBC for SDF were 33.33 ± 14.43 and 50.0 µg/mL, respectively.                                                                      |
micron dilution method and turbidity. The minimum bactericide concentration (MBC) was evaluated in brain heart infusion plates.

Hamama et al. (2015) (Hamama et al., 2015)
Dentine discs infected with S. mutans were treated with 50.9% SDF/KI. The discs were then fractured into two halves, stained with fluorescent LIVE/DEAD stain and observed using confocal laser scanning microscopy.

Savas et al. (2015) (Savas et al., 2015)
S. mutans biofilm demineralized enamels were treated with water, 38% SDF, acidulated phosphate fluoride (APF), ammonium hexafluorosilicate (AHF), ammonium hexafluorosilicate + cetylpyridinium chloride (AHF+CPC), or 0.2% chlorhexidine (CHX) before being incubated for two days. Numbers of viable microorganisms in the biofilms were counted.

The use of the SDF/KI is effective in reducing the numbers of S. mutans in dentinal tubules.

The inhibitory effect of SDF on MMPs increased with concentration. SDF had more inhibition on MMPs than solutions of NaF and AgNO₃.

1. Groups treated with 38% SDF and 42 % AgNO₃ had significantly less hydroxyproline liberated from the dentine matrix than groups F and W (p<0.01).
2. 38% SDF can inhibit demineralisation and preserved collagen from degradation.

Zhao et al. (2017) (Zhao et al., 2017b)
Dentine discs treated with 25% AgNO₃ followed by 5% NaF, 38% SDF or water were subjected to pH-cycling for 8 days before being inspected with SEM, X-ray diffraction (XRD), X-ray microtomography and spectrophotometry with a hydroxyproline assay.

25% AgNO₃ followed by 5% NaF or 38% SDF application can preserve dentinal collagen, and result in lower lesion depths.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Studies (year)</th>
<th>Methodologies</th>
<th>Main findings</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mei et al. (2012) (Mei et al., 2012)</td>
<td>The inhibitory effects of 12%, 30%, 38% SDF, NaF and AgNO₃ on matrix metalloproteinases (MMPs) were studied using MMP assay kits.</td>
<td>Inhibitory effect of SDF on MMPs increased with concentration. SDF had more inhibition on MMPs than solutions of NaF and AgNO₃.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mei et al. (2013) (Mei et al., 2013c)</td>
<td>Demineralized dentin blocks were treated with 38% SDF, 10% NaF, 42% AgNO₃, and water. They were then subjected to pH cycling for 8 days before being inspected with SEM, X-ray diffraction (XRD), Micro-CT and spectrophotometry with a hydroxyproline assay.</td>
<td>1. Groups treated with 38% SDF and 42 % AgNO₃ had significantly less hydroxyproline liberated from the dentine matrix than groups F and W (p&lt;0.01). 2. 38% SDF can inhibit demineralisation and preserved collagen from degradation.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mei et al. (2014) (Mei et al., 2014a)</td>
<td>The inhibitory effects of 12%, 30%, 38% SDF, NaF and AgNO₃ on cathepsins were studied using cathepsin assay kits.</td>
<td>1. The solutions containing Ag⁺ have significantly higher inhibitory effect than the solutions containing F⁻ only (p&lt;0.01). 2. SDF solution at all 3 tested concentrations significantly inhibited the activity of cathepsin.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zhao et al. (2017) (Zhao et al., 2017b)</td>
<td>Dentine discs treated with 25% AgNO₃ followed by 5% NaF, 38% SDF or water were subjected to pH-cycling for 8 days before being inspected with SEM, X-ray diffraction (XRD), X-ray microtomography and spectrophotometry with a hydroxyproline assay.</td>
<td>25% AgNO₃ followed by 5% NaF or 38% SDF application can preserve dentinal collagen, and result in lower lesion depths.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Appendix B: QMUL Skills Points Record

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>B</th>
<th>C</th>
<th>D</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Conference Attendance (Five days)</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conference Attendance (Four days)</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conference Attendance (One day)</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conference Attendance (Three days)</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conference Attendance (Two days)</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conference attendance sub-total</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Basic IT/Software course</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doctoral College event/course</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-Learning Course</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Other CPD course</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Other Teaching/demonstrating training</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Other course/event attendance</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Researcher Development Course</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>40.5</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>21.5</td>
<td>86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Course/event attendance sub-total</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>15.5</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>106.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conference Presentation (Oral)</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conference Presentation (Poster)</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Internal Presentation (&lt; or =30 mins)</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Journal Club/Reading Group/lab meeting Presentation</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Giving presentations sub-total</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Journal Club/Reading Group/lab meeting/mentoring group - attendance</td>
<td>16.5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>16.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meeting/club/reading group attendance sub-total</td>
<td>16.5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>16.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seminar attendance (series)</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seminar attendance (single)</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seminar attendance sub-total</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mentoring/supervising of Project Student</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Teaching/demonstrating/mark/this/preparation</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Teaching sub-total</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Refereed Publication (Journal Paper, Book chapter, not abstract) acceptance</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Refereed Publication (Journal Paper, Book chapter, not abstract) submission</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Written publications sub-total</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total (with caps applied)</td>
<td>93.5</td>
<td>97</td>
<td>16.5</td>
<td>106</td>
<td>313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Target</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>210</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Appendix C: Awards

1. Third place of 2016 London Region Young Persons Lecture Competition

2. 2017 IADR Cariology Research Group Science Award

3. 2018 Armourers & Brasiers Travel Grant

4. 2018 BSODR Student Bursary
Cariology Research Group Science Award

PRESENTED TO THE GROUP OF

Wei-Te Huang

IADR 95th General Session

San Francisco, USA
March 23, 2017
Appendix D: Conference presentations

2016 IADR in Seoul, Korea (poster presentation #1053):


Cariostatic Influence of Commercial SDF on Hydroxyapatite Disc Demineralisation Kinetics

W. Huang*, T. Duminis, D. G. Gillam, P. Anderson, S. Shahid

Objectives
To analyse and understand the cariostatic effect of silver diamine fluoride (SDF) and the synergistic role of Ag+ and F− ions on the demineralisation kinetics of hydroxyapatite (HAp).

Methods

HAp discs were put into pH 4.0 acetic acid for 4hrs demineralisation and then removed to be treated by cariostatic agents (Table 1). The discs were subsequently immersed in the acid for further 4hrs demineralisation (Fig 1).

Throughout the film experiment, concentrations of Ca2+ and Ag+ were continuously monitored by ISE. The rate of Ca2+ release with time was used as a proxy for the rate of demineralisation. Similarly treated HAp powder samples were analysed using 31P and 19F MAS-NMR.

Table 1 – Contents of the application agents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Contents of cariostatic agents</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Riva Star (SDF + KI, 0.006g/ml F)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>NaF (6000ppm F)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>AgNO3 (34120ppm Ag+)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>AgNO3 (34120ppm Ag+) &amp; KI (saturated)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>KI (saturated)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>AgNO3 (34120ppm Ag+) &amp; NaF (6000ppm F)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>AgNO3 (34120ppm Ag+) &amp; NaF (6000ppm F) + KI</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results
Riva Star exerted 100% demineralisation inhibition (Fig 2) due to the formation of CaF2 and Ag3PO4 as detected by NMR (Fig 3 & 4). Furthermore, no black staining was observed [1].

Discs treated with AgNO3 showed an initial increase in Ca2+ release followed by a reduction (Fig 5a) due to the formation of Ag3PO4 as detected by 31P-NMR (Fig 3). This treatment produced black staining.

Conclusions
The components of Riva Star work synergistically to inhibit the demineralisation process of the HAp discs. This may be due to the formation of insoluble Ag3PO4 and CaF2 as detected by NMR. The addition of KI as reducing agent also eliminates the black staining caused by the silver ion product application.

Acknowledgements: Thank SDF, Ltd for providing the samples and partially supporting my IADR

References
Abstract

Silver has traditionally been used in dentistry as a bactericide. However, recently it has been suggested that Ag\(^+\) influences enamel demineralisation directly. The aim was to understand the chemical interactions of Ag\(^+\) with enamel’s mineral components during demineralisation using hydroxyapatite (HAP) discs as isotropic enamel analogues. Three HAP discs (PlasmaBiotal, UK; 20% porosity), 14 mm (D) X 2 mm (H) were demineralised for 4 h in 50 ml, 1.0 M buffered pH 4.0 acetic acid, 37 °C. The discs were then removed and treated with either 3.16 M AgNO\(_3\) solution; saturated KI solution; or 3.16 M AgNO\(_3^+\) saturated KI solution. The discs were then further demineralised for 4 h. ISEs (Ion Selective Electrodes) were used to monitor the rate of demineralisation by measuring Ca\(^{2+}\) concentration increases in the solutions at 1 min intervals. The changes in Ag\(^+\) concentrations were also monitored contemporaneously. Similarly treated HAP powder samples were analysed using \(^{31}\)P MAS-NMR (Magic-angle spinning Nuclear Magnetic Resonance) to detect formation of phosphate salts. The rate of Ca\(^{2+}\) release before and after treatments were:

AgNO\(_3\): Initial increase in Ca\(^{2+}\) release rate from 0.11 mM/h to 0.17 mM/h for 1 h, reducing to 0.0266 mM/h thereinafter. Overall decrease 24 %. Staining observed.

KI: Decrease in Ca\(^{2+}\) release rate from 0.095 mM/h to 0.045 mM/h. Overall decrease 47 %. No staining observed.

AgNO\(_3^+\)KI: Decreased in Ca\(^{2+}\) release rate from 0.072 mM/h to 0.0175 mM/h. Overall decrease 24 %. No staining observed.

\(^{31}\)P MAS-NMR indicated formation of Ag\(_3\)PO\(_4\) for samples treated with AgNO\(_3\), but not for KI treated nor AgNO\(_3^+\)KI treated samples. Topical application of AgNO\(_3\) reduces demineralisation of HAP by forming a Ag\(_3\)PO\(_4\) protective barrier, but stains the surface. Addition of KI prevents formation of Ag\(_3\)PO\(_4\), and also staining. However, KI does not detriment protection, possibly due to formation of an AgI protective barrier.
ISE study of effect of silver ions on demineralisation of hydroxyapatite disc

W. Huang*, T. Duminis, P. Anderson, S. Shahid

**Aim**

- Silver has traditionally been used in dentistry as a bactericide.
- It has been suggested that Ag⁺ also influences enamel demineralisation more directly.
- The aim was to understand the chemical interactions of Ag⁺ with enamel's mineral components during demineralisation using compressed hydroxyapatite (HAP) discs as isotropic enamel analogues.

**Experimental approach**

![Experimental approach diagram]

Fig 1—Procedures of Exp.

**Contents of cariostatic agents**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Agent</th>
<th>Concentration</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AgNO₃</td>
<td>0.128 ppm Ag⁺</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KI (saturated)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO₃ (0.128 ppm Ag⁺) &amp; KI (saturated)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 1—Contents of the application agents

**Results**

ISEs (Ion Selective Electrodes) were used to monitor demineralisation.

- Similarly treated HAP powder samples were analysed using 3¹P MAS-NMR (Magic-angle spinning – Nuclear Magnetic Resonance) to detect formation of phosphate salts.

**Conclusion**

The topical application of AgNO₃ reduces demineralisation of HAP by the formation of Ag₃PO₄ protective barrier, but stains the surface following reduction to metallic silver. Addition of KI prevents formation of Ag₃PO₄, avoiding the staining, but does not deter the protection, possibly due to the formation of AgI protective barrier, which is white and does not decompose.

References

Objectives: Silver Diammine Fluoride (SDF) has been used to manage dental caries for decades. Commercial SDF products contain silver and fluoride ions at high concentrations. However, the mechanism behind its positive clinical outcome has not been clearly verified. The aim of this study was to investigate the cariostatic effects of the topical application of silver and fluoride ions individually, and in combination, on the demineralisation of human enamel.

Methods: Human permanent molars were sectioned to provide 8 caries-free smooth surfaces. These were polished and then 5mm X 5mm windows were created using nail varnish. The samples were demineralised for 4 h in 50 mL 0.1 M buffered acetic acid pH 4.0 at 37°C. Ion selective electrodes (ISEs) were used to monitor Ca\textsuperscript{2+} concentration changes in real-time throughout the experiment as a proxy for demineralisation. After 4h, the samples were removed and topically treated with the cariostatic agents shown in Table 1 using a microbrush. The samples were then placed back into demineralisation solutions and Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release was recorded for a further 4 h period. Furthermore, \textsuperscript{31}P and \textsuperscript{19}F MAS-NMR was used to assess the interaction of fluoride ions and silver ions with the apatite phase.

Results: The decrease in Ca\textsuperscript{2+} release following topical application of cariostatic agents is shown in Table 2. The fluoride ions had the greatest efficacy in reducing demineralisation, whereas silver ions had the least effect. \textsuperscript{31}P NMR results showed that silver reacts with apatite to form Ag\textsubscript{3}PO\textsubscript{4}. This was observed following application of SDF, AgF and AgNO\textsubscript{3} but not NaF. \textsuperscript{19}F data showed formation of CaF\textsubscript{2} in samples treated with SDF, NaF and AgF.

Conclusions: SDF application inhibits the demineralisation process of enamel, which might be attributed to the establishment of a barrier consisting of Ag\textsubscript{3}PO\textsubscript{4} and CaF\textsubscript{2} on the surface. The fluoride ions play the major role of the cariostatic function.
### Table 1. – Four groups of cariostatic agents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cariostatic agents</th>
<th>Concentration</th>
<th>Sample size</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SDF</td>
<td>50.9 wt% (341280 ppm Ag, 60000 ppm F)</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF</td>
<td>40.1 wt% (341280 ppm Ag, 60000 ppm F)</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaF</td>
<td>13.3 wt% (60000 ppm F)</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO₃</td>
<td>53.7 wt% (341280 ppm Ag)</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Table 2. – Inhibition ability based on calcium ion release

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group names</th>
<th>Inhibition efficacy (% decrease in Ca²⁺ release)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SDF</td>
<td>45.3±4.6 %</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF</td>
<td>52.8±5.2 %</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaF</td>
<td>55.6±3.3 %</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO₃</td>
<td>11.9±3.7 %</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
2017 BSODR in Plymouth, UK (poster presentation #83):

W. Huang*, P. Anderson, S. Shahid “Cariostatic Effect of Riva Star vs Conventional Silver Diammine Fluoride”

Introduction

SDF has been used in dentistry since 1970s, and numerous studies have proven its abilities in arresting dental caries 1. However, the blackening of the treated teeth is a severe disadvantage, which remains its application.

In contrast to conventional silver diammine fluoride (SDF), Riva Star (SSI, Australia) contains saturated potassium iodide solution (SSKI) to prevent black staining due to photo-reduction of silver2.

Aims and Objectives

This study compared the effects of applications of SSKI following SDF applications on demineralisation of human enamel, dentine and cementum.

Methods

A human permanent molar was sectioned to provide enamel, dentine and cementum samples (n = 2), which were allocated into SDF Tx (3.16 M SDF) and Riva Star Tx groups (SDF + SSKI). Each sample was coated with nail varnish, leaving 3 mm X 4 mm window exposed. Protocol of each group was same as follows. Firstly, sample was immersed into 50 mL, pH 4.0, 0.1 M buffered acetic acid at 37 °C for 4 h demineralisation. Next, sample was taken out to be topically treated with SDF Tx or Riva Star Tx using a micro-brush. Thereafter, treated sample was put back into pH 4.0 solution for further 4 h demineralisation. Throughout 8 h demineralisation, Ca²⁺ ion selective electrodes (ISE) was used to monitor changes of ion concentrations at 1 min intervals. Cariostatic effects of treatments were based on decrease of Ca²⁺ releases before and after Tx.

Results

The percentages of reduction in the rates of mineral loss (PRML) of treatments were shown in Fig 3. Relative to conventional SDF, Riva Star Tx showed enhanced cariostatic effect on enamel and cementum, but not dentine. Furthermore, there was less staining of samples treated with Riva Star as compared to conventional SDF.

Conclusion

SDF treatments (with and without SSKI) have significant cariostatic properties. Addition of SSKI application enhances the cariostatic effects on enamel and cementum, but not dentine. SSKI application eliminates black staining to some extent.

wei-te.huang@qmul.ac.uk
2018 IADR in London, USA (oral presentation #0454):

W. Huang*, P. Anderson, S. Shahid “Dose-dependent Inhibitory Effects of Silver Compounds on Enamel Demineralisation”

Abstract

Objectives: To investigate the effects of different concentrations of AgNO₃, AgF and Ag[NH₃]₂F (silver diamine fluoride, SDF) on enamel demineralisation.

Methods: Fifty-four enamel samples were sectioned from caries-free permanent molars and polished using 600 grit sandpapers. Thereafter, samples were nail varnished, leaving a 3 mm X 4 mm window exposed. The samples were then allocated into nine groups (n = 6). These groups were treated with 3.16 M SDF, 3.16 M AgF, 3.16 M AgNO₃, 2.36 M SDF, 2.36 M AgF, 2.36 M AgNO₃, 0.7453 M SDF, 0.7453 M AgF and 0.7453 M AgNO₃, respectively. Initially all samples were individually demineralised by immersing into 50 mL, buffered pH 4.0 acetic acids for 4 h at 37 °C. Next, the samples were topically treated with their assigned application agents with micro-brush for 1 min and then return to the acids for further 4 h demineralisation. Calcium ion selective electrodes (ISEs) were used to monitor the ion concentrations at 1-min intervals during the demineralisation. The percentage reduction in the rate of calcium loss of enamel (PRCL<sub>enamel</sub>) was calculated, based on the change of Ca<sup>2+</sup> release rate. Afterwards, enamel from each group was powdered and scanned with <sup>19</sup>F and <sup>31</sup>P magic angle spinning-nuclear magnetic resonance (MAS-NMR).

Results: The mean PRCL<sub>enamel</sub> of all groups is shown in Table 1. The PRCL<sub>enamel</sub> increased with concentration in the groups treated with SDF and AgF, while decreased in the groups treated with AgNO₃. In the spectrums of MAS-NMR, CaF<sub>2</sub> and fluorapatite (FAP) were detected in the groups treated with SDF and AgF. Also, formation of CaF<sub>2</sub> was predominant over FAP for every group except that treated with 0.7453 M SDF, for which FAP was predominant.

Conclusions: Silver compounds have dose-dependent inhibitory effects on enamel demineralisation. The inhibitory mechanisms of SDF and AgF are associated with the formations of CaF<sub>2</sub> and FAP.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Silver compound concentrations (M)</th>
<th>3.16</th>
<th>2.36</th>
<th>0.7453</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SDF</td>
<td>65.2±3.3 %</td>
<td>60.9±4.5 %</td>
<td>41.6±2.2 %</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgF</td>
<td>65.6±6.2 %</td>
<td>61.0±5.5 %</td>
<td>61.7±3.7 %</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AgNO₃</td>
<td>0.0±5.3 %</td>
<td>4.5±5.9 %</td>
<td>21.9±3.2 %</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Appendix E: Published paper and papers in preparation


Papers in preparation:

“Inhibitory mechanisms of Silver Compounds on Hydroxyapatite Demineralisation”: Aimed to submit to JDR. (Drafting)

“Dose-dependent Inhibitory Effects of Silver Compounds on Enamel Demineralisation”: Aimed to submit to JDR. (Drafting)